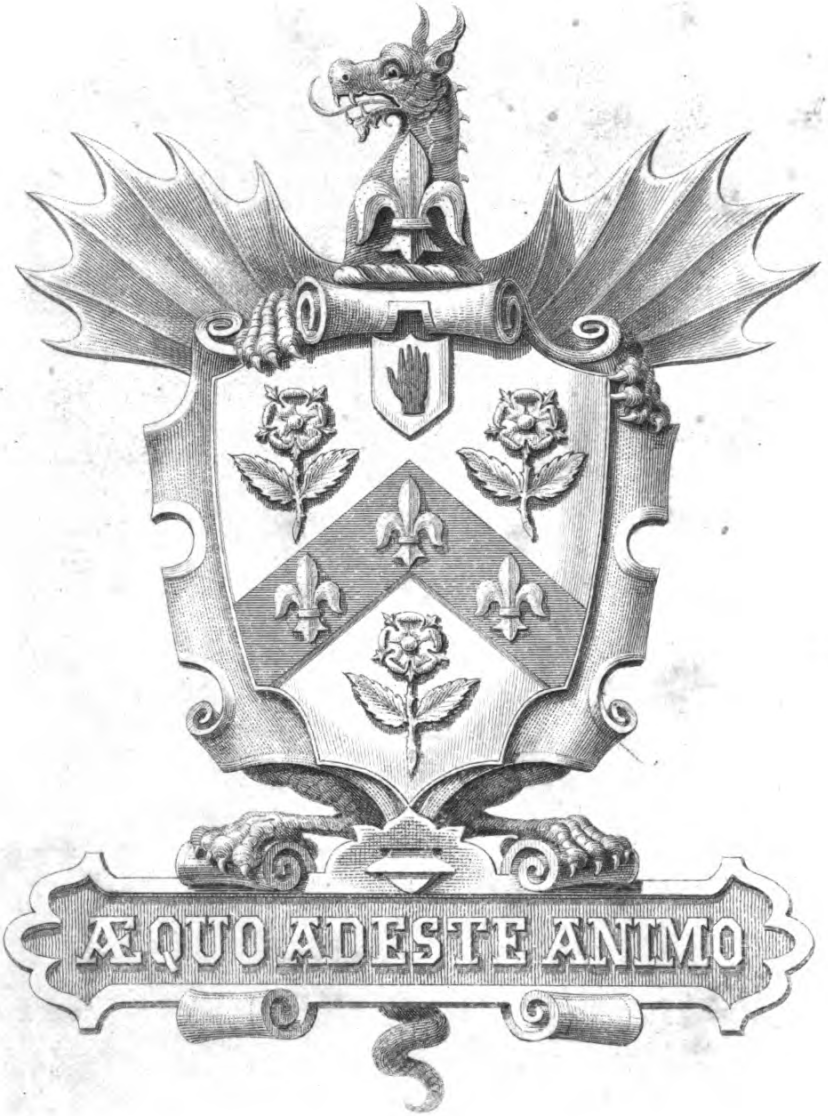

VOYAGES

AND

TRAVELS

THROUGH

The RUSSIAN Empire, TARTARY, and Part of the Kingdom of PERSIA.

By JOHN COOK, M. D. at *Hamilton.*

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

Si ad honestatem nati sumus, ea ant sola expetenda est, aut certe omni pondere gravior est habenda, quam reliqua omnia. TUL.

EDINBURGH:

Printed for the AUTHOR. M,DCC,LXX.

THE

CONTENTS.

Chap.

Chap.

Chap.

Chap.

TO

THE MOST NOBLE

DOUGLAS,

DUKE OF HAMILTON,
CHATTELERAULT AND BRANDON;
MARQUIS OF DOUGLAS
AND CLYDESDALE;
EARL OF ANGUS, ARRAN,
LANARK AND CAMBRIDGE;
LORD AVEN, ABERBROTHICK,
POLMONT, MACHANSHIRE,
AND INNERDALE;
BARON DUTTON;
HERETABLE KEEPER OF HIS MAJESTY'S PALACE OF
HOLY-ROOD-HOUSE, ETC. ETC. ETC.

MY LORD DUKE,

HAVING, by the appointment of your illustrious parents, had the honour to tend your Grace, the late Duke of Hamilton, and Lady Elisabeth, in the various diseases and disorders incident to infancy and childhood; and the happiness, by the divine blessing on a safe practice, and an incessant care to carry you through them, and preserve such precious lives, I, in respect of those perils, and their ever uncertain events, now feel much pleasure and satisfaction, where I formerly

formerly felt the moſt ſenſible pain and ſolſicitude.

YOUR Grace then, the ſecond hope, is now, alas! (here ſoft pity ſteals a tear) the firſt; and, too ſoon, the Head of a moſt antient, and a moſt illuſtrious Family; but the bud is beautiful; for, in the dawn of youth, you bid fair for future eminence, and that you will in the day of manhood republiſh the virtues of your Great Anceſtors.

YOUR Anceſtors, an illuſtrious Race! were, my Lord Duke, great ſubjects, nearly related to Sovereignty, diſtinguiſhed in their ſeveral ſucceſſions for their wiſdom and their valour, and by their firm and ſteady adherence to Liberty, to Loyalty, and Religion: And your Grace, animated by their great example, ſweetly blended with the milder virtues of the moſt amiable Beauty and Perfection imaginable, "ſo perfect, and ſo peer-"leſs," will, I know it, begin early to emulate their excellence, and, born a Prince, behave after a princely manner.

FOR it is not titles of honour, however many and ſplendid, nor dignity of ſtation, however

however high and elevated; nor wealth, however vaſt and various; but true virtue, and inward worth, a ſoul ſupreme, ſuperior to fortune, to paſſion and pride, that ennoble humanity, make a man great, good, and god-like, and mark him out as the object of the veneration of the preſent, and the admiration of all ſucceeding ages.

MEANWHILE, permitted by your Grace, a high and undeſerved diſtinction, I moſt humbly, and with much diffidence, preſume to lay the following Travels at your Grace's feet, and pour forth my fervent prayers, that you may be endowed with the choiceſt gifts; that you may tread in the paths of wiſdom and virtue, which alone lead to true glory and ſolid greatneſs; and that you may live long, great and good, the pride of your country, as well as the prime of the Peerage, to adorn your high ſtation, and adore the Glorious Author of it.

With the moſt profound, and the moſt
reſpectful eſteem, I have the honour to be,
May it pleaſe your Grace,
Your Grace's moſt humble, moſt obliged,
and moſt devoted Servant,
JOHN COOK.

ALPHABETICAL LIST

OF

SUBSCIBERS NAMES.

A

John Aikman, Eſq; of Roſs
William Aikman, Eſq. of Ladylands
Robert Alexander, Eſq;
John Alexander, provoſt of Peebles.

B

Rev. Mr Baillie at Hamilton
John Balfour, Eſq; of Pilrig
Mrs Balfour
John Bell, Eſq; of Antermony
Lord Binning
Major Thomas Bland, Eſq;
George Bogle, Eſq; of Daldowy
Mr John Boyes writer in Hamilton
James Buchanan, Eſq; of Drumpelzier
Mrs Buchanan of Drumpelzier
Mr George Buchanan
— ——— ———, jun. } of Glaſgow
Mr Andrew Buchanan
Mr Thomas Brown, ſurgeon in London
James Bruce of Kinroſs, Eſq;
James Burnet, Eſq; one of the Senators of the College of Juſtice.

C

Adam Cairns, vintner in Lanark
John Caldwell, officer of Exciſe in Lanark
Rev. Mr Chatto of Hanaſwood
Daniel Campbell, Eſq; of Shawfield

Colonel

Colonel Campbell Fletcher
James Carmichael, Esq; of Hailes
Mr —— Chalmers
Alexander Chancellor, Esq; of Shielhill
The Hon. Francis Charteris of Amisfield
Lieutenant Adam Cockburn
James Cook, M. A.
Alexander Cook, merchant in St Petersburgh
James Cook, jun. supervisor in Lanark
John Cook } Granada
Piercy Cook, surgeon } Granada
George Cook
Mr Andrew Crosbie, advocate
Mr Robert Cullen of Parkhead
William Cross, Esq; sheriff of Lanark.

D

Hugh Dalrymple, Esq; of Nunraw
Mr James Dunlop of Carmile
James Dougal, Esq; of Easterhouse
Henry Dundas, Esq; sollicitor general
Charles Dalrymple, Esq; of Orangefield
Rev. Dr David Dickson of Kilbucho
Mr John Douglas, advocate
Archibald Douglas of Douglas, Esq;
Dr Colin Douglas
Rev. Mr Doby in Glassford
Mr John Downs, merchant in Hamilton
Robert Dick of Garchary, Esq; professor of law, Edinburgh
Sir James Dunbar, Bart:
Robert Durham, Esq. of Boghead

E

Right Hon. the Earl of Elgin.

Alexander

SUBSCRIBERS.

F

Alexander Ferguſon, advocate
Adam Ferguſon, L. L. D. P. Moral. Philoſ. Edinburgh
Andrew Fletcher of Salton, Eſq;
John Fordyce, Eſq;
James Forreſt, Eſq; of Clunie
John Forreſt, ſurgeon in Tranent
Dr Frazer
Mr Robert Fram writer in Dalſerf.

G

John Gardener, writer in Lanark
Sir Alexander Gilmour, Bart.
Right Hon. the Counteſs of Glencairn
Right Hon. Earl Gower
Right Hon. Counteſs Gower
Rev. Mr John Gray in Cambusnethan
Dr Gregory, profeſſor of medicine in Edinburgh
Captain John Grieve, Eſq; in Peebles
Mrs Græme.

H

Lady Hamilton of Roſehall
James Hamilton, Eſq; of Browncaſtle
Lord Hailes
Sir David Dalrymple of Hailes
Her Grace the Ducheſs of Hamilton and Brandon
Lady Eliſabeth Hamilton
Right Hon. the Earl of Haddington
Archibald Hamilton, Eſq; of Roſehall
Mrs Hamilton in Garin
Mrs Hamilton of Wiſhaw
Miſs Hamilton of Hallcraig
Robert Hamilton, Eſq; of Wiſhaw

Major

SUBSCRIBERS.

Major James Hamilton, Esq;
Mr John Hamilton in Glasgow
John Hamilton, Esq; of Bellfield
Thomas Hamilton, Esq. of Overtown
Capt. James Hamilton, Esq; of Broomhill
Archibald Hamilton, Esq; of Dalsert
Mr Haldane
Mr William Hamilton wright in Edinburgh
Miss Harriet Hamilton
William Hay, Esq. of Drummelzier
William Hogan at Lanark
Alexander Home, Esq;
Hon Charles Hope-Vere of Craigiehall
Colonel Horn Elphingston
William Hope-Vere, Esq.
Right Hon. Earl of Hyndford
Right Hon. Countess Dowager of Hyndford
Mr John Hutton, bailie in Lanark.

J

Rev. Mr John Johnston in Biggar
Mr John Joy, officer of Excise in Haddington.

K

Mr William Ker, bailie in Peebles.
David Kinloch of Gilmerton, Esq;

L

Right. Hon. the Earl of Lauderdale
Right Hon. the Countess of Loudoun
Lieut. Benjamin Lambert
William Lawson, Esq. of Cairnmuir
Hon. Lady Louisa Levison
Mr William Lourie in Hamilton
Capt. James Lockhart, Esq. of Cambusnethan

Miss

SUBSCRIBERS.

Miſs Iſabel Lockhart, (now Mrs Muirhead of Herberſhire)
Miſs Lockhart of Cambuſnethen, (now Lady Juſtice Clerk)
Right Hon. the Marquis of Lorne
William Lennox, Eſq. of Woodhead
Mrs Leith, Edinburgh
John Luther, Eſq. member of Parliament for Eſſex.

M

Mr Donald M'Keller
Capt. James Mansfield, Eſq.
Mr John More, ſurgeon in Glaſgow
William Morehead, Eſq. of Herbertſhire
Rev. James Morehead in Stonehouſe
Right Hon. Earl of Morton
Mrs Murdoch of Roſebank
Rev. Mr Mitchell at Muirkirk.

N

Right Hon. Lord Napier
Miſs Naſmith of Haugh-head
John Nisbet, Eſq. of Northfield.

O

General Oughton, and his Lady
Mrs Orr of Barrowfield.

P

Mr Paterſon in Kilmarnock
Andrew Pringle, Eſq. one of the Senators of the College of Juſtice.

R

Mr Andrew Ramſay in Glaſgow
Mr Rankin, ſurgeon in Douglas

James Rannie, wine-merchant at Leith
Capt. Rofs-Lockhart, Efq. of Balnagowan
Mr Rogers in Lanark
Dr Rutherford, profeffor of medicine in Edinburgh
Archibald Robertfon of Bedlay, Efq.
Rev. Mr John Risk at Dalferf
Capt. James Roberton, Efq. of Earnock.

S

Mr James Somervile
Sir John StClair of Stevenfon, Bart.
Mr Robert StClair, advocate
Mr Robert Scot in Lanark
Mr Walter Scot, writer
Mr William Stirling, merchant in Glafgow
John Sterling, Efq. in Leadhills
Lady Stirling of Ardoch
Lady Stirling of Glorat
James Stirling, Efq.
Mr John Stevenfon, profeffor of logic in Edinburgh
Dr Alexander Stevenfon, profeffor of medicine in Glafgow
Mr Robert Story in Hamilton
Alexander Stewart, Efq. of Torrence
Andrew Stewart, Efq. of Craigthorn
Lieut. Colonel James Stewart, Efq.
Mrs Stewart of Caftlemilk
John Swinton of Swinton, Efq.
Archibald Swinton, Efq.
William Swinton, Efq.
Mifs Betty Sutty in Edinburgh.

W

Mrs Wallace of Cairnhill

Mr

SUBSCRIBERS.

Mr William Wallace, profeſſor of Scots law in Edinburgh
Mr William Wardrop of Cult
John Wedderburn, Eſq. of Goſsford
Mr Lancelot Whale, rector of the grammar-ſchool in Hamilton.
Capt. Richard Whyte of the third regiment of dragoons.

Y

Major William Young, Eſq.
Robert Young, Eſq.
James Young of Netherfield, Eſq.

INTRODUCTION.

THE public muſt decide concerning the merit of the following travels: meanwhile their author, meaning well, and ambitious to pleaſe, if he ſhould not improve his readers, hath ſtrictly adhered to truth, and advanced nothing falſe.

Impartial in his narrative, he endeavours to render it agreeable and entertaining by giving a juſt and plain deſcription of every diſtinguiſhed place through which he paſſed, or where he reſided; and fairly lays before the reader a general account of its laws and police, its religion, its manners and cuſtoms, with whatever is curious, uncommon, or remarkable concerning it.

Afraid of being deemed tedious, he omits the mention of many obvious things: nor does he, as is but too often the caſe with travellers, affect the new, but always aims at the true, deſpiſing the ſtilts of ſtory, and regarding the ſtandard of things, ſo that all his accounts of them are authentic, and none of them counterfeit.

Long abſent from his native country, and, by his buſineſs, obliged to learn the language of others, he hath had little or no leiſure to cultivate that of his own; hence the gentle reader will, he humbly hopes, generouſly forgive ſome few deviations from purity, proprie-

ty, or correctneſs of ſtyle which may be found in the following ſheets.

Plainneſs and ſimplicity, and not pomp and elegance, have been his aim; and if he hath ſucceeded in this reſpect, he ſought no more.

The *egotiſm*, ſo frequent and familiar in theſe his travels, can ſcarce offend, as it is eſſential to them.

Finally, feeling the frailty of an author, a character to him entirely new, he, with much ſollicitude, but more ſubmiſſion, awaits the award of the public, in which, be it praiſe or cenſure, he ſhall moſt reſpectfully acquieſce.

VOY-

VOYAGES

AND

TRAVELS.

CHAP. I.

The Author's departure, and what happened immediately before he left England.

ON the first of May 1735, I was taken ill in Chelsea with a malignant fever, from which, by the great care of Dr Sharp, I was recovered; but it was succeeded by a slow remittent one, which daily seemed to increase, notwithstanding that worthy gentleman let me want for nothing which a skilful physician could administer; whereon he, having consulted the late Dr Mead concerning my case, was advised by him to send me down to Scotland to the place of my birth, not doubting but my native air, with the aid of proper medicines, would carry off the fever, and accomplish my recovery.

I carefully followed this advice, and lived about eight months in Scotland: but could scarcely observe any change for the better. Early in the year 1736, I resolved to go for Russia, hoping that the voyage, and change of

air, would do me ſome ſervice, or at leaſt that I could but die; and that was then a matter of no conſequence to me, whether it ſhould happen abroad, or at home.

Accordingly, in June I took ſhipping for London, and on the fifth day of July fell down from Blackwall with the tide to Graveſend, in a ſhip commanded by Mr Thomas Belchier.

We arrived at Elſineur on the 10th, and at Cronſtadt on the 29th of July. This paſſage was thought by many to be one of the quickeſt ever made from London.

But here the reader will halt a little, till I ſhall have told him of two trivial accidents which happened to me before I left this happy land of liberty and good ſenſe.

The ſhip having fallen down from London to Blackwall, we dropped anchor for the night; and the maſter went to London. My brother, the mate, two countrymen and I went on ſhore to ſpend the evening: We ſtaid about two hours, and were going to bid farewell to our countrymen, when the mate told me, if I had any gold to change it, and pay our ſcore; for, ſaid he, what I afterwards found to be falſe, "Britiſh ſilver is of greater "value than our gold in Ruſſia." I then bid the maid, (as our hoſt and his wife were gone to the country on a viſit) get me change for a guinea. The maid ſoon came back with the guinea, and ſaid ſhe could get no ſilver for it; when, as I was juſt going to pay our reckoning,

a waterman entered the room, and told us that he would go and get it exchanged for ſilver. Upon enquiring, and the maid aſſuring us that he was honeſt, and well known to the whole family, I accordingly gave him the guinea, but never ſaw him more.

Determined however to have juſtice done me next morning, we ſtaid in the houſe till nearly eleven o'clock at night, when we were of a ſudden ſurpriſed with a female ſcream, which ſeemed to indicate great diſtreſs. Ever ready to contribute what help I could to the afflicted, I ran to the room to the relief of the fair one, who, in an angry tone, told me, "that her houſe was of good repute, that no-"thing of that kind had ever happened be-"fore that time, that ſhe was miſtreſs of the "houſe, and that the man in the room with "her was her huſband, and that they hop-"ed to get us puniſhed for defaming her "houſe." My anſwer was, "Well, well, "good woman, I have been cozened out of a "guinea, and doubt not of getting ſatisfac-"tion;" and ſo returned to my company.

Soon after this affair, a real or pretended watchman entered our room with his long pole, and ordered us to bed. We deſired him to be gone, as we were honeſt people, and making no manner of diſturbance. Our mild anſwer made the fellow more bold, upon which we turned him out, and remained quiet, till we were alarmed with the cry of the

ſhip's

ſhip's crew hoiſting up the anchor, which obliged us to part with our honeſt hoſteſs, and me to put up with the fooliſh loſs of my guinea.

In our paſſage to Ruſſia, I told our captain the whole tranſaction. He deſired the narration under my hand; this I readily gave him, atteſted by my brother, and the mate. In the year 1741, I was informed by Captain Belchier, whom I met at that time in St Peterſburgh, that his crew at their return to London went to that houſe, got drunk upon the credit of the guinea, and at laſt preſented to the people of the houſe my atteſted declaration, as payment of their reckoning. The landlord and his family threatened, the ſailors ran mad, and broke every thing, not leaving a ſingle glaſs window, nor any thing they could break, and ſo with great ſatisfaction retreated to London.

CHAP. II.

Of Elſineur and Cronſtadt.

AT Elſineur I went aſhore, till the ſhipmaſter diſpatched ſome buſineſs, which was finiſhed in leſs than two hours; I can therefore ſay little about the people, only that they ſeemed to be very poor, but happy under the government of their king. They were extremely affable to us. I made only one general

neral remark concerning that town, as I was in no other, namely, that their native animals were very ſmall, except themſelves and their maſtiff dogs.

At Cronſtadt the ſhipmaſter told me that I ſhould pay my compliments, without loſs of time, to the commander Admiral Gordon, elſe it would be very ill taken: Accordingly I went with him to a large palace, where the Admiral lived. As I entered the door, a man, ſtanding with proper inſtruments, ſtopped me, and pointed to my ſhoes, which were covered with duſt. He immediately cleaned them with as great art as if he had been taught in London. I offered him money, but a gentleman, who was walking in the lobby, forbade me, and, in good Engliſh, aſked me if I imagined their Admiral was not able to pay his ſervants for doing their duty. I excuſed myſelf to him, and obſerved, that as I imagined he was a Briton, he knew it was the cuſtom in that country to give vails to gentlemens ſervants. He ſmiled, and told me that it was no cuſtom in Ruſſia, and that their maſters took it as a very great affront; not only ſo, but that it made them uſeleſs; as they miſ-ſpent their money, and neglected their duty. I could not deny the juſtice of his remark, and he immediately in the moſt obliging manner ſhewed me the room where the Admiral was. The Admiral aſked me a great many pertinent queſtions, and, in ſhort, received me

with

with that graceful eaſe which is natural to great minds. Amongſt other things he aſked me, Whether I had any acquaintances in Ruſſia? and, Whether I was recommended to any perſons who could be of ſervice to me? My anſwer was, That I knew not a ſingle perſon, nor did I aſk for recommendations to any. He ſaid that a knowledge of buſineſs was the beſt recommendation in that country, but at the ſame time an introduction to the principal overſeers, made every thing more eaſy, and told me, that although Ruſſia was but in its infancy in moſt branches of arts and learning, yet I would experience as ſmart an examination as in any country; but doubted not that I ſhould meet with juſtice. He then ſpoke to a gentleman who was in company with him, in the German language, and, after that, deſired me to wait upon that gentleman tomorrow, who would give me a letter to the Archiator, who was Preſident of the Medicine Chancery, or College of Medicine, and that probably the Archiator would order me to be examined in a very few days; and, if I was found qualified, he made no doubt of my being put in buſineſs without loſs of time. Next morning I got the letter from the gentleman, who was phyſician to the fleet at Cronſtadt.

My ſhort ſtay in Cronſtadt, and my ignorance of fortification will not permit my giving an exact or ſatisfactory account of the place: Suffice it however to ſay, that it is, con-

ſidering

ſidering its infancy, a port of no ſmall ſtrength, great ſafety to ſhipping, and good policy. The port is a ſemicircle on the ſouth ſide of the iſland, built from the bottom of the ſea with ſtones, and topped above with a ſtrong ſtage of timber, which ſupports a great number of the largeſt cannon. From the middle of the ſemicircle, exactly oppoſite the port or entry, is built a large tongue, ſo far into the harbour, as to leave only room for ſhips of the largeſt ſize to be warped in. The royal navy ly moored on the eaſt ſide, and ſhipping from all trading countries ly on the weſt ſide of the tongue. Directly oppoſite the port of this fine harbour, at a little diſtance, is a ſmall rock well fortified, and furniſhed with large cannon, called *Crownſlott*. No perſons are allowed to have fire or candle aboard any ſhip in the harbour: A candle is allowed in great need; but the candleſtick muſt be placed in a veſſel with water. All gun-powder is taken from the ſhips before they enter the harbour, and ſecurely put into the imperial magazines till the ſhips are warped out, and ready to ſail. Cook-rooms are built at a diſtance from the ſhips next the city, in the harbour, ſo that the water ſurrounds them on all ſides, where the ſeafaring people are allowed to dreſs their meat. Fronting this harbour is a range of fine palaces, built of brick, for the great ſea-officers, and their different courts. Behind theſe buildings is the city, conſiſting of many wooden houſes,

and one of the fineſt dry docks poſſibly in the world; behind all which to the north is a large line and ditch, reaching from eaſt to weſt, on the rampart of which are many baſtions with cannon. The whole iſland is naturally fortified on the eaſt, north, and weſt, with ſhallow water and many rocks and ſtones; and the city is alſo well fortified by art. The royal navy here conſiſts of about thirty ſhips of war; one of them, the Royal Ann, mounts 120 guns. The fortifications are defended by marines and ſailors. When any ſhip is to be let into the port, a ſoldier is placed on board, to take care of ſmuggling, and that the orders of police be ſtrictly complied with. Their authority, if they behave well, is not ſmall. Every morning and evening a large boat, with an officer, full of ſoldiers, is rowed round the ſhipping, and at every ſhip the officer enquires, If all is well?

Two accidents happened whilſt I was there, of which I muſt acquaint the reader. I bought an anchor of brandy at Elſineur: Before we dropped anchor at Cronſtadt, I was informed that the cuſtom-houſe officers would carefully viſit every cheſt, and that my brandy would ſtand a bad chance, though it was in bottles. The mate deſired me to leave my key with him, whilſt I went with the Captain to wait on the Admiral. At my return I was informed, that ſo ſoon as eight or ten of theſe cuſtom-houſe people ſaw the flaſks, they ſeated them-

ſelves

ſelves round with a view to drink, ſaying, *Boch dal*, that is, "God hath ſent," a very common expreſſion among the Ruſſians, when they accidentally meet with any good luck. The mate, who was preſent, told them that thoſe bottles belonged to a doctor; that there was poiſon in ſome of them, but as the doctor was gone aſhore, it was impoſſible for him to ſay which was good, or dangerous. Upon this they roſe condoling their misfortunes.

The other is; A paſſenger, who had a few watches to diſpoſe of, and a dozen of new hats. The ſailors, who had given him a good leſſon, ſmuggled the watches eaſily, but the hats coſt more trouble, as each ſailor could take only one at a time on his head. At laſt it was obſerved by one of the cuſtomhouſe ſoldiers in a ſhip which lay along ſide of ours, that the ſailors went aſhore with new hats, but returned either with old ones, or none. This happened juſt as the whole cargo had been ſafely landed over night. Next day, in the afternoon, as the paſſenger was going aſhore, the diſcovery was then made public; whereupon the ſoldier ſeized him, and wanted to take the watch from his pocket; for which, in place of delivering it, he gave the ſoldier a box on the ear; but the people on board inſtantly ſeparated them, ſo that none of them were hurt. The ſoldier ſwore revenge, and the mate, a very ingenuous good lad, told me, that our young paſſenger was in no ſmall danger of

being ſeverely proſecuted; becauſe, he ſaid, which I afterwards found to be very true, that the greateſt general durſt not ſtrike a ſoldier when upon duty; that ignorance of the language was the beſt, and indeed a good plea: "But," ſays he, "if you'll take my advice, "I hope to bring him off, at the going round "of the evening boat." Accordingly the mate and I cauſed prepare a quart mug of punch, but ſo ſtrong, that it was at leaſt half ſpirits, with a large proportion of ſugar; this, after having feigned to drink to each other, we left on the capſtain, and went into the cabbin, pretending buſineſs. The ſoldier wanted to taſte the liquor; he did ſo, found it palatable, taſted it again and again, and thus continued tipling till he had emptied the mug, fooliſhly believing it fair drink, and that we had forgot it. This was juſt what the mate expected; for when the round returned, our ſoldier was faſt aſleep, and ſo dead drunk, that, when rouſed, he could not articulate one ſenſible word. The mate told the officer, that he could not take upon him to anſwer for what might be done in the ſhip, as the ſoldier was a thief, and was drunk, ſleeping on the deck, with liquor he had ſtolen whilſt we were engaged in buſineſs below; that he believed he was drunk in the morning, having without the leaſt reaſon abuſed one of the paſſengers, and wanted to rob him of his watch. The officer coming aboard, and finding the man quite

quite ſtupid, changed him immediately for another; and ſorry was I next morning to ſee him ſeverely whipped with rods. The ſoldier on board the other ſhip, I was told, was afraid to complain to his officer, as he had not done his duty, when he at firſt made the obſervation; for which neglect he would have been ſeverely puniſhed. But the other, that was puniſhed, ſuffered for two crimes in one action; the firſt was, in taking what was not his own, and the next, in getting drunk, eſpecially when upon his duty.

CHAP. III.

The author ſets out from Cronſtadt, and arrives in St Petersburg.

HAVING ſtaid in Cronſtadt three days, I went in a long boat to St Peterſburg, which is about 20 miles diſtant from Cronſtadt. We ſailed up the end of the gulf of Finland, which, to the eaſt of Cronſtadt, may be about nine or ten miles broad: The country on both ſides is a riſing country, covered over, as we thought, with lofty trees, moſtly firs, which forms an agreeable proſpect from the water; but there is much cleared ground, tho' in our ſituation we could ſee but little of it. The wind blowing high, and eaſterly, accompanied with ſuch thunder and rain as I never

ſaw

ſaw before, and the ſtorm encreaſing to ſuch a degree, that we were happy in getting our boat under the cover of trees, and moored on the weſt ſide of Vaſilie iſland; where, all wet, we covered ourſelves with the ſails, and lay till the morning, near a haven called the *Galley port*, or *Galerna haven*.

On Sunday morning we ſailed up the north branch of the Neva, having Vaſilie Oſtroff or iſland to the ſouth, and the caſtle to the north ſide, both ſhores well covered with barks, and ſhips of a ſmaller ſize: We at laſt arrived in the city, and lodged at the only British pub ic houſe in it, kept by one Frazer a Scotſman.

CHAP. IV.

Concerning St Petersburgh.

HERE I do not propoſe to deſcribe this city, but only to take notice of the more remarkable places, of the royal palaces, different courts, curioſities, cuſtoms, and policy of the city; which, by the bye, is a pattern to all the reſt of the cities in Ruſſia. Tho' there are ſeveral different palaces in the city, I ſhall only mention three. The moſt ancient and moſt reſpected, is a ſmall houſe, which was built by the founder of the city, and father of the grandeur of the Ruſſian empire, Peter the Great. It is built of wood, conſiſting of

a ſmall kitchen, a room to do buſineſs in and dine, and a ſmall bed-chamber, little bigger than a large bed-ſtead. It has a gallery round it covered, where that great emperor uſed to walk in rainy weather, or when the heat of the ſun was intolerable.

The firſt boat built in Peterſburgh by him, is placed at the end of this palace; and both houſe and boat are covered over with a ſhade of timber, to preſerve them from the injuries of the air. It ſtands on the north ſide of the river Neva, near the citadel. The next palace ſtands on the ſouth ſide, is alſo built of wood, and is called the ſummer palace. This was alſo ſaid to be built by the great Peter; but it differs much from the former, being a very great building, containing a good many ſpacious rich rooms, well ſupplied with the richeſt furniture, having the Neva on the north, and very ſpacious gardens to the ſouth, in which are ſeveral pleaſure-houſes, pavilions, ſhell-works, water-works, fine ſtatues, and a private play-houſe, with a beautiful lake, well ſtored with fiſh, which will ſwim to you upon tolling a bell on a ſtage, whence they get the groſs of their food.

Before this palace there is a very ſmall ſhip mounting ſix ſmall cannon, ſaid to have been built by a Ruſſian peaſant, and preſented to the great Peter, who called it Daduſhka or grandfather, and obliged every ſhip, which was

built

built at St Peterſburgh, to pay their reſpects to it.

About half a mile down the ſouth ſide of the Neva, ſtands a noble pile of ſtone, a very large ſquare, containing a great number of ſpacious rooms: This is called the winter palace. It is probably one of the fineſt buildings in Europe; but the inſide far outdoes the outſide. Surely no palace has nobler furniture, made of the fineſt materials, and remarkable for the moſt exquiſite workmanſhip. In this ſquare are lodged, not only the royal family, its retinue and attendants, but alſo the guards on duty, which are ſaid to be 500, and are changed every morning. About a quarter of a mile ſouth from the Neva, is another beautiful wooden palace built upon a canal. I never was within it, but was told that it ſurpaſſed all the reſt in gilding, rich finiſhing and furniture, as it was built by the late empreſs Elizabeth; and it is probably very true, as ſhe loved grandeur, and in her conceits never conſidered expence. There are two others of leſs note.

The ſupreme court, which abſolutely rules the whole Ruſſian empire, and all other inferior courts, is called the cabinet. In it the monarch preſides; and, with the advice of two or three principal officers of ſtate, decides all ſecret, perplexed, troubleſome, and weighty affairs; nor do they give notice of any of their tranſactions to any other court, except they

they judge it neceſſary; and this is always done by way of a royal command, againſt which there is no addreſſing, but by way of petition in the humbleſt manner, never finding nor even inſinuating the ſmalleſt fault, but reſpectfully repreſenting the real ſtate of the caſe, and moſt humbly entreating re-conſideration of the affair; but this is never done till the monarch is verbally and cautiouſly informed of the matter, and the great miniſters of ſtate are gained over to aſſiſt heartily in a repeal; for, ſhould they act in a leſs cautious manner, it would ſurprize none, if all the members of the inferior court were puniſhed with death, as even the high ſenate itſelf is not exempted.

The next two great courts are thoſe of commerce and foreign affairs: Their names imply their natures. No court interferes with the buſineſs of another, except in ſome very particular caſes.

The next court is the high ſenate; it conſiſts of many or few members, as the monarch commands; 24 or 36 are commonly the number: They have a preſident ordained by the cabinet. In this court all inland affairs are debated and diſcuſſed; but an appeal may be made to the cabinet: However, the appellant muſt be ſure that juſtice is on his ſide; for, ſhould it prove otherways, no leſs than death is the puniſhment. This is the ſupreme court of juſtice and policy, to which all the courts of Ruſſia, and all the provinces

in it, muſt reſort and addreſs for directions and relief. This court is conſtantly kept where the Empreſs reſides; that, in caſe of any difficulty, redreſs and directions may be had without loſs of time.

The next two courts ſeem to be pretty equal in power and honour; they are the war-office and admiralty: They decide all affairs relating to the army and fleet, under the direction only of the cabinet. If money is wanted they apply to the ſenate, if their demands are reaſonable; but if refuſed or delayed, they only may, without danger of puniſhment, apply to the cabinet. In all theſe courts, which conſiſt of many members, the propoſal is firſt debated, then the youngeſt members opinions are aſked; and when the majority agree to it, it then becomes a law; but the minority have it in their power not to ſubſcribe the reſolution, without finding fault with it, ſhould the reſolution afterwards be diſapproved by the cabinet; thoſe who did not ſubſcribe it are never cenſured: Every member has a right to ſubſcribe, and, if agreeable to his conſcience, he ought to do it. Every dubious matter is repreſented to the cabinet for their approbation. If they act according to the regulations eſtabliſhed by Peter the Great, they never can be found culpable, altho', for weighty reaſons, the cabinet ſometimes do at leaſt modify, if not alter, thoſe regulations.

The

The laſt court is the policy. In every province there is a general provincial policy, and every city has a private policy. The inferiors muſt report regularly to their ſuperiors. But all the provinces in Ruſſia muſt report to St Peterſburgh-policy, and obey their orders. The policy is of very great uſe, and a great protection of the innocent and induſtrious, as it, without loſs of time, apprehends, and puniſheth all ſuch as are guilty of ſmaller crimes, takes up, examines, and puniſheth all idle people, and vagrants, of whatſoever condition or rank. This way of expreſſing myſelf, by ſaying vagrants of whatſoever condition or rank, may appear ſtrange to Britons; but it is, notwithſtanding, extremely compatible with the conſtitutions of that abſolute empire; for every nobleman and gentleman is obliged to ſerve the ſtate, either in a civil or military capacity. Now there are ſome who abſcond; and ſuch I term vagrants: For when they are diſcovered, they will, though of the beſt family, be ſeized by the policy, and ſent to the department to which they belong, to ſtand trial, and the conſequences of it. It is to be obſerved here, that no court can try any perſon belonging to another department, except for capital crimes; and in the courts of war and admiralty, they are always tried by a court-marſhal, of which I ſhall ſay ſomething preſently. No perſon whatſoever can travel

from

from one city or province to another, without a paſſport from the department to which he properly belongs, ſpecifying the number of his attendants. Any gentleman may grant a paſſport to any of his houſehold, but it muſt have annexed to it the policy ſeal. Peter the Great was ſo very careful to prevent people travelling without proper paſſports, that he conſtantly uſed them himſelf, and had them regularly booked. Thus at this day even ambaſſadors, and field-marſhals at the head of their victorious armies, muſt have paſſports, and conſequently all inferiors muſt ſubmit to the ſame regulation. It would be thought a great mark of ſlavery to be conſtrained to have a paſſport from Edinburgh to London, and that this paſſport muſt be examined at every city through which the perſon paſſeth. I cannot deny that it is ſo; but ſtill, in ſuch an extenſive country as Ruſſia, I imagine it is very neceſſary, and for the good of the people. The deſign does not ſeem calculated only to keep people under great ſubjection, but to prevent idle people from going about to rob, plunder, or ſteal from their neighbours, and to protect the innocent, diligent, and uſeful ſubject, and alſo to bring a ſmall revenue into the treaſury. Suppoſe one with a regular paſſport, travelling from St Peterſburgh to Moſcow, is robbed and murdered on the road, his friends are not long before they ſuſpect it. They immediately apply to the policy. The policy give notice in the

the news-paper, and without loſs of time ſend off couriers to all towns through which he was deſigned to paſs, and orders to inferior policies to report when that perſon paſſed through their diſtricts; at laſt, *e. g.* they find that he paſſed through Novogorod, but after that never was ſeen on the whole road to Moſcow. The governor of Novogorod iſſues out orders for his dragoons to purſue, and raiſe the whole country, to ſcour the deſerts and woods. The country people at ſuch a time never fail to ſeize all ſuſpected perſons, nor dare they harbour any who have no paſſport; unleſs they are reſolved to ſuffer death. They alſo ſend off expreſſes to all the neighbouring provinces. Every perſon is ſtrictly examined. Thus the reader will ſee it is next to impoſſible that rogues or robbers ſhould eſcape, unleſs upon the borders. And although the robbers are ſoon ſeized, and puniſhed with torture and a cruel death, the governor ſhall ſcarcely eſcape degradation; and though he ſhould have the greateſt intereſt, he will yet be ſure to meet with a very ſevere reprimand, and threatened if he does not keep better order, and a more ſtrict out-look for the future. He is alſo mulcted, to make good at leaſt what value was loſt, when the unhappy man was murdered. The governor muſt bear all this; but he alſo mulcts his inferiors. Thus you ſee how much it behoves every one to take great care of the traveller; for if he is taken ill of any natural

diſeaſe,

diſeaſe, and death enſues, a ſtrict inquiſition is made about every circumſtance of his diſeaſe, what attendants he had, and what was done for his relief, that it may give his friends ſatisfaction, and that they may recover what value he had, which his books or his attendants ſhall diſcover. The great uſe of the policy will appear from two remarkable inſtances which I ſhall here recite.

When the late great field-marſhall Prince Michael Golitzin was a child, his mother (the old prince being dead) went out to the country, with her numerous family, to paſs a month in the ſummer, for the benefit of the country air in the hot weather. She left Moſcow late in the afternoon with a numerous retinue, which, according to her rank, were well provided with arms. They had not travelled fifteen miles till they were attacked by a very great band of robbers. There were ſeveral noblemen and gentlemen of the army with her, who encouraged the ſervants, and behaved themſelves ſo gallantly, that they killed and wounded a good many of the robbers, not without loſs on their own ſide: however, they could take no priſoners, and were even glad that it was no worſe. At the beginning of the conflict, the waggon, in which were the young prince with ſome of his brothers and ſiſters, was in the rear. The waggoner, at the very beginning, turned the horſes, and drove for Moſcow with all ſpeed, and loſt no

time

time in acquainting the policy with what had happened, who, with all poſſible expedition, ſent off a numerous party to purſue and apprehend the robbers, who had built a cave in the middle of a thicket of thorns in a wood, and had ſo well taken care of tracks, that the party, though they ſoon met with their horſes, were ſome time before they found out themſelves. However, they were at laſt diſcovered, apprehended, and carried to Moſcow, where they were tried, convicted, and condemned to a moſt cruel and ignominious death, which they deſervedly ſuffered.

The next inſtance was that of a robbery, as I had it from a noble lady of great honour. A relation of her's, an old maiden lady, but very rich, kept a girl as waiting woman, for whom ſhe had a great regard. A young fellow came frequently about the houſe to ſell ribbands, beads, and other trinkets. During two or three months, he became perfectly acquainted with all the principal ſervants, and having got a thorough knowledge of the houſe, he made his addreſſes to the lady's waiting-woman, gave her many pretty preſents, told her that he was the ſon of a rich merchant in Siberia, but had ſpent a ſum of money ſince his arrival in Moſcow, and therefore intreated her to let none in the houſe know his affairs nor his parentage. When he had obtained her conſent to marry him, he got her alſo perſuaded, tho' againſt her inclination, not only to make a pri-

a private elopement from her good lady, but alſo to carry off her ſtrong box, in which there was not only a round ſum of ready ſpecie, but alſo all the lady's jewels. It was in the winter ſeaſon; he had a ſledge and a pair of good horſes ready, and ſuddenly drove her out of Moſcow to a pit, where they throw all the dead bodies of felons and ſuicides, and ſuch as have no relations; there they ly and are buried by a biſhop once every year. At their arrival, the villain ordered her to prepare for immediate death, telling her that this place was the burial houſe of felons, and, as he had brought her there, he was determined to put her to death. A peaſant, ſome time before, going home drunk from Moſcow, and not being able to weather the cold, and an extraordinary drift of ſnow, went under the cover of this pit, and fell aſleep, but, by the noiſe of the threatenings of the villain, and the importunities of the poor girl, was not only wakened, but overheard their diſcourſe. He, both brave and reſolute, iſſued out, making a terrible noiſe, and threatened the villain, who, frightened out of his wits, leapt into the ſledge, and inſtantly drove off, leaving the maid with her drunken, but generous deliverer. This incident was very lucky for them both, becauſe had it not happened, the maid would certainly have been murdered, and the poor man had very likely been frozen to death. When the girl had recovered the uſe of her reaſon,

confined

ſhe informed the peaſant of every thing ſhe had done, and all that ſhe knew of the villain. Upon this he congratulated her, but carried her directly to the police, where they both made oath of what they knew: but as they themſelves were unknown, they were confined till next day, when a meſſage was ſent to the lady, acquainting her with what had happened. The good old lady uſed all her influence to preſerve her ſervant from the puniſhment due, procured her a pardon from the Empreſs, took her home, and got her comfortably married.

The police however loſt no time in making proper ſearch for the villain, and in a very few days got him, when, being convicted of his crime, he was broken on the wheel; and the lady got back almoſt the whole value ſhe had loſt. Long after this affair, the lady herſelf happened to be a patient of mine, and confirmed the foregoing account which I have given of it. From theſe two inſtances then, the great uſe of a good policy in a deſpotic nation is obvious to every one.

CHAP. V.

Concerning the Policy of the Medicine Chancery and Council.

BEFORE I proceed to proſecute my Journal, it will not, I hope, be deemed

 improper

improper or unpleaſing, that I here give ſome account of the medical department, and of its powers and regulations, to which I belonged fifteen years.

The ſupreme regulations of medical affairs were inſtituted by Peter the Great, who, when in Holland, got acquainted with a Scotch Gentleman, Dr Erſkine. Peter loved this phyſician, and prevailed upon him to go to Ruſſia: He gave him great encouragment, he was declared to be the Emperor's principal Phyſician, and Director-General of all Phyſicians, Surgeons, Apothecaries and their dependents within that vaſt empire, and Chancellor of a court, called the Medicine Chancery; where every thing relating to that buſineſs, and all the branches of it are determined. Peter alſo, as I was well informed, preſſed the Doctor to be one of his privy council; but of this honour he would never accept; as he alledged, that altho' the Emperor had no difficulty of getting him acknowleged as ſuch by the whole empire, yet he was certain, ſuch a ſtep would not fail to procure him, or any other foreigner, many enemies: But it was believed, that notwithſtanding this, the Emperor very frequently conſulted him. It was Dr Erſkine who erected the Medicine Chancery, and planned out the fundamental regulations of it which are in force at this day. The Doctor was Preſident of this Chancery, and appointed a Phyſician (two ſecretaries and

many

many writers, &c.) as Vice President; whose business it is to go to the Chancery once or twice a day, and stay in it two hours at least, in the forenoon; and, if needful, as many in the afternoon; he receives all reports from all the provinces in Russia, from the armies, and fleet: He is obliged to acquaint the President every morning and evening with whatever happens, and takes his directions, and issues out orders accordingly. There is one Chancery in St Petersburg, and one in Moscow. The one is subordinate to the other, as the court is at either of these places. The Chancery, upon any extraordinary affair, immediately conveens such a number of physicians and surgeons as the president shall think proper, nor may any of them be absent, except they are sick. On the principal chancery does every branch of the medical affair absolutely depend; nor dares any one practise in Russia, till he be examined and found qualified, either by the Chancery or its deputies, and get a written testimonial of his qualifications. All physicians must submit to this regulation, which effectually prevents quackry of all kinds. Some few quacks however, there are, tho' not in the imperial service; but if any thing curious, uncommon, or remarkable, happens in their practice, they must immediately report the case to the Medicine chancery. The chancery buys up all drugs, and takes care that

every

every drug be good of its kind. These are delivered over to the principal apothecaries who must account for every ounce. There are indeed some private apothecaries; but they are as much subject to the rules of the chancery as those employed by the empire.

Every army of 40,000 men are allowed two physicians and a surgeon-general. Every regiment is allowed one surgeon and a mate: and every company is allowed two young men, who can let blood, spread and apply plaisters, and do many other small things. The regimental surgeons must be obedient to the directions of the physicians and their general-surgeon, either jointly or separately. The apothecaries must instantly dispense what medicines the surgeons require for the use of the regiments, if attested by the surgeon-general, or any of the physicians. The general hospital of the army must be visited by the physicians and surgeon-general, at least twice every week; and every regimental-hospital, as often as possible, during the summer. The surgeons must visit all their sick twice every day, and if any extraordinary case happens, they must report it without loss of time to the surgeon-general; and every regimental surgeon must report every month the state of the regiment, during the preceding month, to their surgeon-general. The surgeon-general makes out a general report of the sick of the whole army,

army, which, being ſigned by one of the phyſicians and him, is ſent to the Medicine-chancery, by which means the Empreſs or cabinet, can every month, ſee the ſtate of the army, in reſpect of health and ſickneſs. Except for crimes of the deepeſt dye, no colonel dare arreſt or otherways moleſt their ſurgeons; becauſe they are accountable only to the medical department for their actions; and if they neglect their duty they are ſeverely puniſhed.

In caſe of an accuſation by a commander againſt the ſurgeon, a memorial is made out, and ſent to the ſurgeon-general. He is obliged immediately to take cognizance of the crime: If it is of ſuch a nature, that he thinks the ſick are not to be longer truſted to the ſurgeon, he appoints another, puts the ſurgeon under arreſt, and reports to the chancery: The chancery orders, with the approbation and conſent of the war-office, a council of war to ſit upon the accuſed, conſiſting of five officers, and two old ſurgeons: Whatever is done, is ſigned and ſealed up, and ſent to the chancery, who have it in their power to put the ſentence in execution, or elſe, (which frequently happens) to moderate the ſeverity of it.

CHAP. VI.

Concerning the Hospitals in St Petersburgh.

PETER the Great erected two royal grand hospitals in St Petersburg. A description of them will suffice to make any person sensible of the nature of the service in every hospital in Russia, as there is no difference in the regulations. One is for the army, the other for the fleet. They are joined together, compleating three sides of a very large square, In the middle of the side facing the river Neva, is a fine church for the use of both hospitals; the wards are very well contrived; the building is two stories high, and covered galleries go quite round both hospitals, so as any person may walk without being exposed to the injuries of the weather. At each corner of each hospital is a noble theatre, and dissecting chamber. I have known nine fresh bodies in it at once, belonging to the sea hospital. The theatre is large enough to contain two or three hundred spectators. Here are kept a very great number of curiosities, and chirurgical cases injected, or otherways preserved. It would be agreeable to the curious to have a historical catalogue and description of these curiosities; some of my preparations are thought worthy of a place there. Centinels are placed so as to suffer

none

none to go out or come in to the hoſpital, except proper perſons. Several phyſicians belong to them; a ſuperior ſurgeon, and five ordinary ſurgeons, ten ſub-ſurgeons or mates, and twenty ſtudents to each. A profeſſor of botany teaches the ſtudents of both hoſpitals. Each hoſpital has a profeſſor of medicine and ſurgery, and a profeſſor of anatomy, and a limner is appointed to teach ſtudents to draw any part of the human body. The Profeſſors of medicine, ſurgery, and anatomy, are obliged to teach and examine twice every week in their ſeveral hoſpitals; but ſo that the ſtudents of both may attend each profeſſor.

The profeſſor of botany teaches every lawful day, during the ſummer. If any very difficult chirurgical operation is to be performed, the profeſſor of anatomy is operator, unleſs he appoints one whom he can truſt: but both phyſicians and ſurgeons ſhould be preſent.

If there has been any diſpute about a diſeaſe, of which a patient died, the body muſt not be interred until the cauſe of death is diſcovered by anatomical diſquiſition; and the profeſſor has a right to diſſect a part of any dead body before burial: For the bodies of all malefactors, ſuicides, and all who die in jail before execution, are ſent to theſe hoſpitals. Every morning at ſix o'clock, the bell warns the ſurgeons to get ready: At ſeven, it ſignifies

nifies their immediate attendance in the ward, where those who are wounded, ulcerated, or have fractured bones, or dislocated joints, are kept, or must make their repair from the other wards: In an instant all hands are at work, until all the ordinary patients are dressed.

Then succeed consultations about patients labouring under more troublesome diseases: Ordinarily, young surgeons give their opinions first, and so on till the eldest, joined with those of the physicians and operator. Every one has a right to plead: The greatest number carry their design, if supported by either a physician, or a surgeon of known abilities. When the operation is performed, the cause of the disease is always discovered, if it be a member; and when death happens, the cause of it is likewise frequently developed; but no man is found fault with, tho' his opinion should not be just; but still it does him great honour who foretold what happened.

I cannot help here relating a case, which happened whilst I attended that hospital. At the exhibition of grand fire-works for the taking of Asoph from the Turks, the tail of a rocket fell upon the head, and fractured the skull of a sailor, who was immediately carried to the hospital. Dr Mounsey and I attended, but could then neither speak the language of the country, nor high Germain, and but with few who understood Latin. The operator asked our opinion. We both frankly told him, that notwithstanding

ſtanding they could not diſcover any fracture by any means they had tried, and that altho' the ſkull was laid bare, by a large wound, in which they could diſcover no fracture, we were yet of opinion there was a fracture near that place; and thought that the trepan ſhould be applied without loſs of time. The reſt did not join with us; but the profeſſor ſaid that he ſuſpected what we advanced was but too true. A day or two after that (for neither of us would take care of him, as our advice was rejected) Dr Mounſey and I, both then very young, obſerved that the patient was very ſtupid, which daily encreaſed, and that his eyes were much inflamed, and had not their faculties; that the ſlaver run conſtantly from his mouth, and that he ſeemed quite inſenſible of pain.

We, talking concerning him, and ſeeming to ſmile, were obſerved by the ſupreme ſurgeon, a proud man, and of no great learning, who deſired Mr Hanhart, profeſſor of anatomy, to aſk of us "the cauſe of our mirth?" We were ſimple enough to tell him, which was the cauſe of great jealouſy ever after; and I doubt not of our being ſo ſpeedily ordered to the ſervice of the navy.

A few days thereafter, the doctor and I returned to the hoſpital. I went to the chamber of anatomy (having been appointed to aſſiſt the profeſſor to prepare leſſons of anatomy ſome time before that) ac-

cording to cuſtom: The door was made faſt with a bit of twine ſealed, which, in Ruſſia, is reckoned more ſacred than even a lock. I, however, imagining it had been done by ſome young men, thought nothing of it, (becauſe I had an undoubted right, by order of the Medicine-chancery; nor could even the profeſſor deprive one of this right, but by a counter-order from the chancery,) and therefore, with my knife, eaſily made the door open; and obſerved a new body, ſewed up in a matreſs, ready for burial. I inſtantly cut that open alſo, knew the face, and found that they had ſawn the ſkull through, and not only found a great fracture, but many ſmall ones; and, in place of the left lobe of the brain, that ſpace was full of putrid matter, &c. I inſtantly acquainted Dr Mounſey; and left the body, without pretending to conceal what we had been about. Whilſt we were talking of this affair, a young man, who ſpoke Latin well, came and aſked us, If we knew who had been in the anatomy-room? I told him all we had done; and that I was ignorant the door had been made faſt by order, or that a ſeal to a door, that properly belonged to me, could prevent my entrance, unleſs orders from the chancery were countermanded, of which I thought I ought previouſly to have been made acquainted, and finally that I ſhould petition the Chancery properly concerning it. When he had reported what was

ſaid

ſaid to the firſt ſurgeon, a council was called, and I was afterwards aſſured, that this affair had put them in no ſmall fright. Leſt I had put my threats in execution, the profeſſor invited Dr Mounſey and me to ſupper, and enjoined us ſecrecy. He told us that he could not have his will for the firſt ſurgeon, who had great friends at court, and was alſo protected by the archiator; and that ſuch protection was the principal cauſe of his almoſt always having had a majority of votes againſt him. Tho' this affair has but a very bad appearance, yet many excellent operations were performed, and many notable cures perfected during my ſtay in this hoſpital.

From this ward, the ſurgeons proceed with the phyſicians through all the remaining wards: The ſurgeons mates write down in a day-book what the phyſicians order for every perſon; to which book their names and diſeaſes are prefixed. After all the patients have been viſited, the ſurgeons mates go with their ſtudents to the apothecary, where they attend till the medicines are prepared; carry them to the reſpective wards, and exhibit them as was directed: One of the ſurgeons in ordinary watches by turns (this is called *dejour*) in the hoſpital every day; nor is it lawful for him, who is on watch, to go out of the hoſpital, unleſs he get another ſurgeon to ſupply his place; and they muſt both go to the ſurgeon in chief, and acquaint him with their

agreement

agreement. The reſt of the ſurgeons may attend their private patients, but muſt return at 7 o'clock p. m. The mates, as they are not allowed to practiſe, nor the ſtudents, can go no where from the hoſpital, without leave from the principal ſurgeon.

Reports of the number of ſick entered, cured, dead, and remaining, with the names of the different diſeaſes, are regularly ſent to the Chancery every week. There are no want of all ſorts of attendants. The beſt of food is plentifully allowed them by the phyſicians order, as alſo drinks and decoctions of all kinds; nor are the moſt expenſive wines ſpared, when neceſſary. If a complaint is made either of the phyſicians, ſurgeons, or their mates, for non-attendance one day, they are mulcted in one month's ſalary; and, on thoſe who bear no rank, corporal puniſhment is inflicted.

By every hoſpital is appointed an officer whoſe buſineſs it is to provide all ſorts of proviſions, and keep a juſt account of the ſame: A number of writers are appointed to aſſiſt him. He has alſo the charge of the ſoldiers who keep watch about the hoſpital, but can puniſh none without liberty from the principal ſurgeon. The preſidents of the admiralty and war-office either go themſelves, or depute others to ſee that every thing is in good order; and the commanders in chief of leſs hoſpitals, at greater diſtance from court, attended by a

fiſcal

fiſcal, enquire every week, If the ſick have good wholeſome proviſions, and well-dreſſed, according to the phyſicians orders? Though the phyſicians, ſurgeons, *&c.* give due attendance, yet if any complaint is made, which I have known to happen, ſtrict inquiſition will follow; but if the complaint is groundleſs, the patient who made it is carefully cured, and, when diſmiſſed, is ſeverely whipped before the whole command.

If a delirious man is diſcontented, no notice is taken of his complaints. It is a regulation through all Ruſſia, that every ſurgeon, whether in the ſervice or not, is obliged in difficult caſes to call for the advice of ſome regular phyſician or ſenior ſurgeon, whether the caſe is internal, or purely chirurgical; nor dare any ſurgeon perform an operation on any perſon, without previouſly having had the advice and concurrence of ſuch, if poſſible to be got. If the patient ſhould die, or have reaſon to complain, the preſumptuous ſurgeon would not eſcape puniſhment. Where there is difficulty or danger, even phyſicians are obliged to call the advice of others, if to be had; and if they neglect to do ſo, and death ſhould follow, they will not eſcape puniſhment. I knew two phyſicians who, for ſuch neglect and malpractice, were inſtantly expelled the ſervice. No apothecary dare give medicines without orders from a phyſician or ſurgeon. At every grand apothecary's ſhop a good ſurgeon

is

is appointed with a ſufficient ſalary to attend daily two hours forenoon and afternoon, to give advice to the poor; and if ſuch are not able to pay for the medicines, the apothecary notwithſtanding diſpenſeth them, and placeth ſuch to the aid of the Empreſs. If any perſon, not having a licence from the Medicine Chancery, ſhould preſume to give medicines to patients, the penalty is no leſs than to ſuffer the knute, to be ſent to the galleys during pleaſure, and confiſcation of all he has, one half for the Empreſs, the other to the informer. If any attendant or ſervant ſhould give any medicines, meats or drink, to a ſick perſon, not authoriſed by the phyſician, he ſhall not, when diſcovered, eſcape a ſevere whipping.

CHAP. VII.

Concerning military regulations.

CONCERNING military affairs, I am afraid, I can ſay but little to the ſatisfaction of the gentlemen of that honourable profeſſion. However, the following is a fair account of the military regulations in the Ruſſian empire. In general, every perſon of the ſmalleſt diſtinction in the imperial ſervice hath ſome rank: Thus, for inſtance, a ſhip builder is a Colonel, and gets the honour of that character paid him in

all

all places. A Generaliſſimo is the higheſt officer in the army; Field-marſhall, General Lieutenant-general, Major-general, Brigadier, and ſo on, form the ſeveral gradations, and end in the enſign. The inferior ought to report daily to his ſuperior concerning the truſt repoſed in him; and his reports muſt be true, elſe he ſtands a chance of being reduced by a court-martial. Every inferior muſt readily obey the orders he gets from his ſuperior, no matter how dangerous; and if an inferior is ordered on irregular duty, he dares not diſobey the orders, but has it in his power to complain of his commander; and if it ſhould be found that he has acted contrary to the regulations, unleſs the inferior pardon him before the court-martial is ended, the ſuperior runs a great riſque of being rendered incapable, at leaſt for a time, during which he has neither rank nor ſalary. If a ſuperior ſtrikes an inferior, which ſometimes happens in drunken ſquabbles, when the complaint is made, ſuppoſe by an enſign, the ſuperior officer is obliged (let his rank be what it will) to appear before the whole command of which he is ſuperior, and there on his knees beg pardon of the gentleman, receive the ſame blows from the provoſt, and pay three years ſalary to him whom he had injured.

If a ſuperior inſults an inferior, by names or language beneath a gentleman to give or take, he will be obliged before the command,

on

on his knees to beg pardon, acknowledge his fault, and pay three years ſalary to the inferior he had inſulted.

CHAP. VIII.

Differences of ranks in the fleet and army.

THE higheſt officer in the fleet is Lord high Admiral, and after him are the Admiral, Vice-admiral, Reer-admiral, Commodore, Captain, and ſo on, down to the midſhipman, who ranks with a lieutenant in the army.

The higheſt officers in the fleet and army are equal, and take their precedency only from the dates of their commiſſions. A commodore is brigadier; a captain in the navy is colonel; a lieutenant is primier major; and the regulations by way of command is much the ſame as in the army.

If a ſuperior officer, whether in the fleet, army, artillery, or engineer, arrives in any garriſoned city, the commander of which is an inferior, he immediately makes his repair to him, reports the ſtate of the garriſon, demands his written orders, parole, *&c.* and thus reſigns the command, while his ſuperior reſides in the place. Whenever a general officer enters a fortified place, a number of cannon are diſcharged, to denote the quality

lity of the ſtranger, that every one may take notice of, and properly reſpect him.

The late Empreſs Elizabeth, however, cauſed the officers, who had that honour done them, immediately pay the expence of the ſalute; which is not great, in regard they have all the materials, and make as good powder as any in Europe.

CHAP. IX.

The different degrees of honour in the army.

THE army has different degrees of precedency. The guards are the moſt honourable, the cuiraſſiers are next, the dragoons ſucceed, the infantry are the laſt of regulars, but one regiment demands the poſt of honour according to the date of their creation. The irregular light horſe called *huzzars* are next in place: The Coſſack granadier regiments preceded by the Coſſack horſe, are the laſt, except the Barbarian Calmuicks. Over and above theſe are the trains of artillery, a moſt glorious body of men. The cannon and mortars are all of braſs. The engineers are likewiſe very honourably reſpected; their officers are equal in rank with thoſe of the fleet.

In St Peterſburg is a large palace, and many buildings belonging to it, as alſo a large fine garden; it formerly belonged to Prince

Mentzicoff. This man was, I think, disgraced in the Empress Ann's reign, when every thing he had was confiscated for the Empress's use. This great palace was allotted for the education of poor gentlemen's children in the military way, and the children of foreigners who had served the empire, and is called the *Cadets Core*. In my time, it was said to give good lodging to fifteen hundred, with their officers; now, I am told, the number is two thousand. A general officer, with a good salary and lodging, is commander in chief. They are divided into companies; every company has a captain, lieutenant and ensign, with rank equal to the guards. They are all lodged in this house, and there is but one grand entry into it. Children are received at the age of seven years. Here they are taught all the European languages, writing, arithmetic, mathematicks, and every branch of natural philosophy, painting, dancing, and fencing. One hundred mount guard daily, and serve in every shape as common soldiers. Those who are not on guard are studying. The masters are not allowed to punish them, but only to mark down their faults: They are not to be whipped with a birch, or any other common rod of correction, because they are gentlemen; but have a piece of fine steel made in form of a sword, very thin, long, but not sharp. For slight crimes they are confined in the guard-house, for greater they must ride the wooden

mare,

mare; for heinous crimes they are flogged with this ſword. If they are not to be kept in order, they are ſeverely whipped with rods, the Cadets uniform torn from them, they forfeit the title of gentlemen, and are reſerved to ſerve as common ſoldiers in the army. If they are of age, diſcreet and diligent, they are advanced firſt to corporal, then captain at arms, laſtly to ſerjeants of their own corps. When they have ſerved honourably till they are ſeventeen or eighteen, they are diſmiſſed to the army, as captains, lieutenants, or enſigns. None dare abſent themſelves without leave aſked and given.

They bear a mortal hatred to the guards, and the guards to them, the effects whereof are ſometimes very terrible, and numbers are killed on both ſides The guards are all accoutered with broad ſwords; the cadets with ſmall tucks. If the guard-ſoldier gets one blow, the cadet is no more; but very frequently the cadet ſhuns the blow, and before the guard-ſoldier can be ready to give another, the cadet runs him through. In order as much as poſſible to prevent ſuch exceſſes, the cadets were not allowed by the empreſs Elizabeth to go to the ſouth ſide of the Neva with their ſwords, nor were the guards allowed to go to their ſide armed; and this prohibition has, I am told, had a very good effect.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

Regulations for widows and orphans in the Ruſſian ſervice and religion.

THE male children of Ruſſian officers have each of them, after their father's death, one fourth of his annual ſalary, till they are ten years of age; the girls have the ſame till they are fifteen; at which time it is thought the boys may be provided for in the Cadets core, and the girls are then thought to be fit for marriage. The widows, if young, have one year's ſalary, if old, they have one fourth, ſo long as they live, paid them annually.

Soldiers boys, as ſoon as they are born, enter into ſmall pay till they are five years of age, when they muſt go to a military ſchool: They have alſo a man's proviſion; but the girls have no allowance. In every garriſoned town there is kept a military ſchool. The boys have all of them one uniform. A captain preſides to keep order: they alſo keep guard upon the ſchool, and are taught to read, write, and keep accompts; but if any of them rather chuſe to beat the drum, or play upon any martial muſical inſtrument, they are encouraged; but the dolts, who diſcover no genius, are kept cloſe to the exerciſe of arms. If an officer of rank approaches towards the ſchool, the whole guard

guard turns out to pay their reſpects with their wooden guns, inſtruments of muſic, and drums, according to their ranks.

In Ruſſia every religion is tolerated, providing ſtrangers do not diſturb the eſtabliſhed religion, which is of the Greek communion. When Peter the Great firſt introduced foreigners into his ſervice, many ſquabbles happened, and frequently murders; whereupon that wiſe prince ordered, under a moſt ſevere penalty, that none of the different religions ſhould diſagree with, or inſult one another on that ſcore; which order hath had its full effect, by preventing confuſion, and promoting government.

It cannot be expected I can ſay much about the religion of the Ruſſians, as it formed but a ſmall part of my ſtudy. They worſhip every day, and the clergy are ſeemingly ſincere and devout; but this is all farce and affectation, as their manners are motley, and their morality is deficient. This remark, however, will, I am afraid, apply, more or leſs, to all the preachers and profeſſors in the world, namely, that their practice is not analagous to their precepts.

CHAP. XI.

Concerning the Russian religion, their churches, &c.

THE Greeks have many holy-days. I imagine they have at least a saint for every day in the year; but they at the same time have many and very severe long fasts, which, one with another, engross nearly one half of the year: they have also auricular confessions, invoke, and pray to saints.

The walls of their churches are hung round with pictures of saints, and some of them extremely rich. They make use of fumigations and holy water, extreme unction, passports for the dead, and prayers after death to relieve the dead out of purgatory. They have many other ceremonies, which I do not remember; but the burial of Christ, and the sanctifying of the water, are the most remarkable. They baptize by three several immersions, and making the sign of the cross.

I was once at the celebration of the burial of Christ crucified, and, as I rightly remember, it was performed in the following manner in the metropolitan church in Astrachan. From the altar, which is always on the east end, next to the *sanctum sanctorum*, and to which no layman may approach, a large stage was erected two foot above the floor, covered with carpets.

On

On the weſt end of this ſtage was a chair facing the altar, and a table before it, covered with clean linen, and on it a large ſilver baſon of water, and a comb. On each ſide of the ſtage were placed ſix chairs. After a long ſervice, the archbiſhop appeared in an ordinary ſattin toga, performed ſome part of duty on the altar, and bleſſed the people three times: at each time he made the ſign of the croſs with two candleſticks, in one of which were three wax candles, in the other, two.

I was told the three wax candles were an emblem of the Ever-bleſſed Trinity; but I have forgotten the meaning of the two. After this ſolemn act was over, he diſappeared, and paſſed into the *ſanctum ſanctorum*. Twelve biſhops, or firſt dignitaries in the dioceſe, walked gravely, in ſuperb ſacerdotals, from the altar, ſix on each ſide of it, and ſeated themſelves on chairs: They repreſented the twelve apoſtles. When they were placed, the archbiſhop again appeared, followed by two deacons and other church-officers, with ſingers, chanting in the moſt charming manner. He, with an awful air and a ſolemn gait, walked along, and ſeated himſelf on the weſt end of the ſtage. The ſingers ſtopped, and a deacon, with profound reverence, preſented to him a comb, with which he combed his head and beard, then waſhed his face and hands, and girded himſelf with a linen cloth, the deacon carrying a bowl of water after him, wherewith

he

he washed one foot of each of the twelve bishops. One of them who represented St Peter challenged him for washing his feet: The discourse betwixt them was what happened betwixt Christ and Peter, when the Saviour of mankind washed his ministers feet. Then he was dressed by the deacons with the richest robes I ever saw, with a crown of gold upon his head, thick beset with pearls, diamonds, rubies, and other precious stones. The twelve bishops were also dressed in extremely rich cloaths, and many pearls upon them; they had also every one a crown, but inferior to that of the archbishop. After this was ended, they all returned to the *sanctum sanctorum*, when one of the priests appeared, and told the audience that Christ was dead, whereon they departed seemingly in great sorrow. This was acted on Friday. The whole citizens appeared little on the streets on Saturday, and many of them eat nothing from the time of Friday's ceremony till Sunday morning; but the cooks were every where set to work on Saturday afternoon, to prepare the most delicious meals of all kinds against Sunday. I was told, but did not see it, that a coffin was really buried on Friday, and was exposed empty in the church on Sunday morning. On Sunday morning, assoon as the clock had struck twelve, the bells tolled for service: However, I did not chuse to rise, but was told, that, after a piece of service was performed, the archbishop

bishop appeared, and, after blessing the people, assured them that Christ was risen from the dead. Upon this a rocket, placed at the church-door, was played off as a signal, which was immediately succeeded by a round of all the cannon in the citadel and the city, which never fails to give notice to all the absent inhabitants, who are not dead or deaf, of the final end of this affair; and then men and women congratulate one another upon this happy occasion, offering an egg, and a friendly kiss.

I was told, these last ceremonies are reckoned so essential, and are so strictly adhered to, that if a common soldier were to meet the Empress, and offer an egg, declaring his belief, he would have the honour of an imperial kiss. In short, after the last service is over, every one resorts to his home, and eats and drinks as much as he is able: For eight days the jubilee is universal; with some it lasts longer, which, in respect of my interest, I found convenient, as surfeits seldom go off without the doctor's aid.

The fast, which is very strict, continues seven weeks: This is succeeded by a voracious eating, and plenty of the strongest liquor, which never fails to bring many to their beds, and not a few to their graves.

CHAP. XII.

A description of the christening of the water.

THE following is a short account of the manner of christening the water, as I saw it in St Petersburgh and other places. A square hole is dug through the ice about six feet one side, beside which are laid a great number of dales after the manner of a floor, fenced around with pales to keep off the mob, with a canopy over it. The service being finished, the clergy issue from the principal church, and form a procession, following one another according to their dignity, and walking four or five in a line, to the number of some hundreds. A great flag of the cross, a large lanthorn, and a large picture of our Saviour, or some saint, are carried amongst them. They proceed in this order, followed by the principal, and common people, singing hymns all the way to the river. The priests enter the square with but a few of the principal people, and there perform other parts of the ceremony. When the water is said to be sufficiently sanctified, a signal is given to 1200 guards, who surround the whole in three lines, and immediately begin a running fire, which is thrice repeated: then the great guns in the citadel begin, and also fire about

300

300 cannon thrice. Thus ends this ceremony, which is performed much after the ſame manner through all Ruſſia. Many ſick fanaticks go to be immerſed in this holy water, in order to be relieved from their complaints; and indeed many of them meet with their deſire, but not in the way they expected; that is to ſay, they are killed by the exceſſive coldneſs of the weather, the ceremony being performed in the middle of winter. Many ignorant fools carry their infants, ſome of them new born, to be immerſed: They are delivered to the prieſts, who duck them thrice over head and ears; ſome happen to be ſtifled, ſome have dropped from the prieſt's hands, and been carried under ice by the ſtream: When this happens, it is ſaid that God took them to himſelf; but many more die of the cold.

CHAP. XIII.

Of the different degrees and cuſtoms of the clergy.

THERE are many different degrees of the clergy in Ruſſia: They formerly had a patriarch; but Peter the Great aboliſhed that dignity, as an office of too great power for a ſubject; in place of which he conſtituted a ſynod at St Peterſburgh, to be near the court. The ſynod determines all eccleſiaſtical affairs; but if it is thought to be of great conſequence,

or

or if any new regulation is to be made, their opinions are first transmitted to the patriarch of Constantinople, and from him to the patriarch of Jerusalem, to get their assent and approbation: When this is obtained, it is a fixed law through the whole Greek church.

They have archbishops, bishops, protopapas, and papas, deacons, and monks; I'm not certain but there are more degrees. The archbishops, bishops, or archimandrites are always elected from the monks, who take the vow of celibacy: The protopapas and papas, as they are allowed to marry only one wife, never can expect to rise higher in the church. If any of the clergy are found incontinent, they are put to death. The protopapas and papas, or ordinary priests, may marry one woman; but if she dies, and he is afraid he cannot live without a woman, he must give up the church, and take to any other business; then he may marry as other laymen do. None in the Greek church are allowed to marry beyond three times, and ever after, let his constitution be what it will, he can have no wife; but the keeping of a mistress is not thought so deadly a sin here as elsewhere, if they only take care of their progeny. Adultery is reckoned a very great crime; but the punishment, if only papa knows it, is many prostrations to some saint daily, for a long time: But if a husband can prove his wife guilty with another

ther man, ſhe is divorced, and the adulterer puniſhed.

The puniſhment for fornication is ſmall; the prieſt appoints ſo many times invoking God's forgiveneſs through the day, accompanied with proſtrations. And the law orders, if a child happens to be born, only that the man buy for his miſtreſs a milk cow. All the time I was in Ruſſia, I never heard of a child-murder but one. It is to be feared, that our abſurd cuſtom in Scotland of obliging offenders againſt chaſtity to perform public penance, the very dregs of popery, is the chief, if not the only cauſe of infant-murder; for our females have as fine ſenſations, and as feeling an humanity as any in the univerſe; but the dread of public ſhame and diſgrace drives ſome of them to deſperation, and makes them do with their hands what they abhor in their hearts. Fornication, no doubt, is an offence againſt order, but child-murder is ſo ſhocking an affair, and is ſo frequent in Scotland, that it calls aloud for means more powerful and more effectual than any that have been hitherto employed to prevent it: And were the clergy to part with, or knock down their ſtool of repentance, it would, I am confident, ſave nineteen of twenty children, who now ſuffer as a ſacrifice to the terrors of the mother's ſhame.

Humanity will forgive this diſagreeable digreſſion, from which I return to my ſtory.

There

There are many very beautiful monasteries in Russia, full of priests and monks: An archbishop or archimandrite generally presides in them. They are not only extremely rich in jewels, silver, and gold, but have annexed to them, for their support, many large territories: I observed, however, not without concern, that the peasants belonging to the church were kept in greater slavery and poverty than those belonging to the most profligate gentlemen. The only reason I can give for it is this, that the clergy, generally speaking, are derived from the dregs of the people, and have not had so liberal an education as the gentlemen, nor such noble sentiments of humanity instilled into their early years; hence that almost total want of it, when they rise to dignity and renown.

The gentlemen are very different now from what they were before: They are all of them employed some way or other in the imperial service; the old ones are dead, and, since the Great Peter's time, there are very few of them who have not made the tour of Europe.

The greatest care is taken of their education: They are not priest-ridden now, as was formerly the case; and were any of them to use his peasants as the priests do theirs, he would not only be hissed by the rest, but no man of either honour or judgment would regard him.

The present Empress hath, I am told, relieved countrymen belonging to the church from such

ſuch ſlavery. She has wiſely conferred proper ſalaries upon them, which makes the hearts of thouſands leap for joy. It was a bold ſtroke! but it ſeems, hitherto at leaſt, to have been done with great judgment. The deſign was good and god-like, and one fifth of the whole empire have felt its glorious effects, for I am convinced, that a number of people not inferior to that proportion were formerly ſubject to the ſacerdotal juriſdiction.

CHAP. XIV.

Of the Academy, Admiralty, Caſtle, and Foundery.

THERE is an academy eſtabliſhed at St. Peterſburgh, by Peter the Great. This academy has a ſufficient number of profeſſors of all arts and ſciences. The Great Peter was at much pains to give encouragement to the learned of all countries to come there. He endowed them liberally with royal ſalaries, and other emoluments; but I'm ſorry to ſay, that before I left Ruſſia, ſome were dead, others had retired to their native countries diſſatiſfied, and the few who remained were much diſpleaſed at being neglected, and having an ignorant perſon placed at their head, as preſident; who, by his great power, and protection from court, made the Empreſs believe that ſhe had ſome of her natives qualified to

become

become profeſſors. The foreign profeſſors, who were moſtly Germans, could do no more than make their diſtreſs known to their friends.

The building is a noble large pile of two ſtories high, with a beautiful cupola in the middle, and an obſervatory. In the middle, below the cupola, is a ſquare ſpace about thirty foot long and thirty broad, without flooring, but a large gallery is built round it, one for each ſtory, ſo that one can ſee from the pavement of the houſe to the top of the cupola. In each of theſe galleries are kept all manner of natural and artificial curioſities, as alſo a good library.

In one of the galleries in a caſe, is the ſkin of a Frenchman, tanned and ſtuffed: This has been the talleſt man I ever ſaw. In another caſe was his ſkeleton, and a pair of breeches made of his wife's ſkin, alſo dreſſed; the leather was like to buff.

On the bottom, or pavement, ſtands the ſkin of an Engliſh cheſnut horſe, ſtuffed, ſaddled and bridled, and beſide it the ſkeleton. Peter the Great uſed to ride this horſe. Amongſt the curioſities are very many abortions, and great variety of monſtrous births, as alſo Ruyſch's compleat collection. Here I ſaw the head of the unfortunate Miſs Hamilton, a Swediſh lady, who loſt it for havnig murdered her child, unlawfully begotten; and this is the only murder of that kind I ever heard of in Ruſſia.

This

This lady was maid of honour to the Empreſs Catharine. It is ſaid Peter went and ſaw her executed: He wept much, but could not prevail with himſelf to pardon her, for fear, as is ſaid, that God would charge him with the innocent blood ſhe had ſhed. He cauſed her head to be capped, and injected. The forehead is almoſt compleat; the face is the beautifulleſt my eyes ever beheld; the *dura mater* and brain are all preſerved in their natural ſituation: This is kept in ſpirits, in a large chryſtal veſſel.

I ſaw three great chambers; in one of them were all manner of earths, foſſils, ſtones, ores, and natural metals, and minerals; in the other, all ſorts of ſhells, moſſes, corals, *&c.* and in the third ſat in an elbow-chair, in wax-work, as big as the life, the Great Peter, dreſſed in a blue coat and waiſt-coat, and breeches, white ſtockings, his legs acroſs, uncovered, having a head of ſhort black hair, with an hanger by his ſide. About him in the room were all the fine mechanical and mathematical inſtruments he uſed to take delight in, and many pieces of work which he made without the help of others.

In another part of the houſe I was ſhown a very large globe; I forget whether it was celeſtial or terreſtrial. It opened on one ſide, into which three or four people went and ſat upon benches round a table. This was thought a very great curioſity. This edifice

was burnt down in the year 1745 or 46; but moſt of the books, papers, and curioſities in it were ſaved, and it was again rebuilt.

The Admiralty is on the ſouth ſide of the river, oppoſite the Academy: It is almoſt a ſquare; one of the ſides facing the river is fortified only with *chevaux de frize;* the other three ſides are ſurrounded by a high rampart of earth, upon a wall of ſtone eight or ten feet high, above the water of a very deep and broad foſſee; the rampart is flanked with good baſtions, and the whole well ſtored with many braſs cannon. There are three entries into the admiralty over draw-bridges; on each ſide is one. Within this fortification are noble buildings, containing offices for every thing belonging to the royal navy. Many ſhips, ſloops, and boats are built here. I ſaw the Royal Anne launched, a ſhip which carried 120 pieces of braſs cannon. There is a tower, and on the top of it an high ſpear, covered with copper, double gilt, with a ſhip on the top of all, of the ſame metal, and alſo double gilt.

On the north ſide of the river, further to the eaſt than the admiralty, is the caſtle, built upon an iſland. It has but two entries over drawbridges. A very large and deep ditch runs from the Neva quite round, till it again rejoins the Neva. I believe it is as ſtrong as is poſſible for the beſt engineers to make it. The fortification is all of ſtone; the walls are very high, and defended by

by ſtrong baſtions, mounted with the beſt braſs cannon. However, like the Tower of London, it is for little uſe, other than that of a ſtate-priſon. I have no notion it can in any ſhape protect St Peterſburgh, tho' I am poſitive it is capable, in a ſhort time, to lay the whole city in aſhes. Within this caſtle are many large magazines, all of them bomb-proof, and many neceſſary buildings, barracks, and priſons. In the middle of it is a very beautiful church, with a ſet of muſic-bells: On the head of the belfry is a high ſpear like that in the admiralty, terminating at the top with a croſs richly gilt. The great Peter lies interred in this church, and I believe all the royal family from his time. A centinel ſtands day and night at the place of interment. Here is one very large ivory branch, fit to hold 100 candles, the handy work of Peter the Great.

Further eaſt, on the other ſide of the Neva, oppoſite the royal hoſpitals, formerly taken notice of, is the foundery, a very noble building, with a ſpear topped with a burning bomb, all double gilt. In this foundery are caſt the beſt cannon, mortars, and bombs in the world.

On the weſt end of St Peterſburgh, is a wharf for building ſhips of ſmall burthen, and machines called camels; they are uſed to carry great ſhips over the bar, for Cronſtad. They are hollow boxes, and ſo conſtructed

ſtructed, that, when full ofwater, one of them brought to each ſide of the ſhip is ſunk as low as to receive betwixt them the keel and bottom of the ſhip: Then they are locked together, and, when well ſecured, the water is thrown out by a great number of pumps. In proportion as the water is pumped out, ſo does the ſhip locked in them riſe; for when they have the whole weight of the ſhip to ſupport, they do not draw 4 foot water, and the bar does not exceed 6 or 7 foot. When the apparatus is adjuſted, and there is but little wind, the ſhip is towed over the bar. I went once on board a 70 gun ſhip that was juſt got over the bar. When the wind roſe and blew hard, I obſerved that the ſeamen were very much alarmed, for fear of their anchors not holding; but the ſhip was very faſt in the camels, and the motion of both was ſcarcely perceptible.

On the weſt end of Vaſilie Oſtrof, or the weſtermoſt iſland belonging to St Petersburgh, Peter the Great built a fine well fortified haven for his galleys. I belonged to this port about 6 months: There are ſaid to be contained in it 200 galleys: A few are ſent to ſea every ſummer, in order chiefly to keep the men in practice. A great officer, called general of the galleys, is commander in chief. No perſon is allowed to enter this fortification, unleſs he is well known. It is about an Engliſh mile to the weſt of St Petersburgh

burgh, and from it you have a fine prospect of the gulf of Finland.

CHAP. XV.

Of the exchange and markets.

ON the weſt end of the ſame iſland is the cuſtom-houſe, and the exchange, where, as in London, the merchants meet. The exchange is nothing elſe than a very great timber ſtage, built one half of it on that branch of the Neva which waſheth the eaſt ſide of the iſland. It is about 300 paces long, and proportionally broad. Near to it is a moſt noble magazine for preſerving merchandize; it is a ſquare built with brick, and has only one great port or entry. An hundred ſoldiers keep watch here day and night, that no harm may happen to the merchants goods. A merchant may have a very large room for paying ten ſhillings per month. The ſide of the ſtage next the river is well lined with ſhips of a ſmaller burthen, during the ſummer ſeaſon, for the readier diſpatch of buſineſs.

Near the ſouthermoſt part of the city is the market-place, where all ſorts of goods, both home and foreign, are kept to be ſold. It is a very large ſquare with four entries; on each ſide whereof is a range of ſhops, both within and without. There are covered galleries built

built quite round the ſquare, both on the out and inſide, that people may be defended from rain. A ſtranger need not, as in other places, hunt through this great city for what he wants to buy: A pleaſant walk in theſe galleries will give him an opportunity of ſeeing many of the beſt people in St Peterſburgh, and all ſorts of commodities in the world. The younger merchants and their ſervants guard it during the night, and in it great order and decency are always obſerved.

CHAP. XVI.

A general deſcription of the City, &c.

THE river Neva runs out of a large lake called *Ladoga*, about twenty miles eaſt from St Peterſburgh. In the mouth of the river is ſituated that ſtrong fort called *Schluſſelburg*, which Peter the Great took from the Swedes. Prince Michael Golitzin took this city by ſtorm. He landed his ſoldiers on the iſland in boats and canoes; many were killed by the artillery; the Prince Marſhall was almoſt killed with a ſtone thrown down from the walls. Peter at a diſtance ſaw the great loſs of his men; and, of ſix couriers which he ſent to raiſe the ſiege, only one arrived ſafe. The prince however would not deſiſt till he had taken the place; at which time he made the

the Emperor ſenſible, that, if he had retreated he would undoubtedly have loſt all his men. This prince was the greateſt general the Ruſſians had, during the Swediſh war. The lake is about 250 miles long, and very near as broad. Much merchandize was formerly ſent from Ruſſia and all the bordering countries about the Ladoga to the different ports in the gulf of Finland, and many veſſels were annually loſt; to prevent which, this great and magnanimous monarch (when he had taken Schluſſelburg, which ſignifies the key city, becauſe it was a key either into Ruſſia or Sweden), cauſed cut a large canal betwixt the rivers Volcholf and Neva, with twenty-ſeven locks or ſluices, through which veſſels may be conveyed quite ſafe for the ſmall expence of a ruble betwixt theſe two rivers. This canal is on the weſt ſide of the Ladoga.

The topography of St Peterſburgh is out of my plan; wherefore I ſhall leave it to others who have more leiſure, after having made the following remarks. The guards are reckoned to be about 12 or 13,000; 15,000 field troops are alſo conſtantly kept in the neighbouring villages, called the *Petersburgh corps*. Every ſtreet, lane, or avenue, have many great gates which are ſhut in the night time: At each gate is a watchman, as in London, with a pole and a great rattle, (having convenient watch-houſes through the whole city) like thoſe with which the farmers here fright away the fowls

fowls from their grain. These watch-men are appointed to prevent robberies and thefts, and to give warning if fire or any thing else alarming should happen during the silent watches of the night. No person is allowed, either in machines, on horse back, or on foot, to pass the streets without a lanthorn. If offenders are observed, they are seized, and sent to the police.

The north of Petersburgh is built, as was said, upon islands, and has the advantage of water-carriage by the branches of the beautiful Neva, than which no chrystal is more pervious or transparent. The south part, which is properly called Petersburgh, is also well supplied with all conveniencies by many canals, but chiefly two large ones, both deep and broad, the sides of which are faced with hewn stones. These canals are almost semi circles. They take their rise out of the Neva on the east, and, running through the city, disembogue themselves into the Neva again on the west. Where the streets (which are all broad, well paved, and formed in straight lines, where possible), cut these canals, there are built large draw-bridges; and that the common people may have no pretext for leaving nastiness in any part of the streets, convenient places are built upon the banks of the river and its canals: Besides, all houses which are built two stories high, and in straight lines, are well supplied with every

conveniency

conveniency to keep the city ſweet and clean. Any perſon wanting to have his court or part of his property improved, may demand from the ſlaves-priſon as many ſlaves as are ſufficient. The number is immediately ſent under a guard of ſoldiers. When the buſineſs is compleated, it is cuſtomary to give the ſoldiers a ſmall acknowledgment for their care; but little or nothing to the ſlaves. Theſe ſlaves are delinquents who deſerve death; but not having committed murder, they are condemned to ſlavery for life; and others, for ſmaller crimes, only for a limited time. Hackneys, porters, watermen, and all ſorts of publick ſervants, have a number on their ſhoulders. They dare not impoſe on the ſtranger leſt they be detected. They are all ſubject to the policy; and if they commit any roguery, it is not ſufficient that they reſtore what they have taken, and pay all expences; but they will be ſeverely whipped on the bare back. If they are not able to reſtore what they have embezzeled, then they are not only whipped, but turned over to the galleys; where they muſt remain till the perſon injured is ſatisfied.

CHAP. XVII.

A continuation of the ſame, and of Peterhoff.

THe Empreſs has a large play-houſe in the city, with German and French actors; alſo a ſet of Italian ſingers. No perſon pays for going to either play or concert; but none are allowed to enter, except ſuch as have tickets by authority. The doors are guarded; and if any ſhould get in without proper right, they would be ſeverely puniſhed. No irregularity can happen here, as the royal family are frequently preſent; and it would be eſteemed moſt criminal and inexcuſable to commit any ſuch folly in the preſence of the Monarch of Ruſſia.

Weſt from St Peterſburgh, about 20 miles, is that beautiful country-ſeat of the Empreſs, called Peterhoff, after Peter the Great, who formed it. Here, on the top of a riſing ground, is a palace, and a great number of neceſſary houſes for attendants. The palace is built by itſelf, eaſt and weſt: The front is ſouth: It is ſituated in the middle of a large garden; and in the centre of it, on the ſouth of the palace, is a very large pond of water, clear as chryſtal. When the Empreſs reſides here, the guards are encamped in the garden to the ſouth: Their tents and regularity make a very fine appearance. The gar-

den

den on the north, is betwixt the palace and the gulf of Finland; It contains many acres of ground, and has in it many pleasure-houses, cascades, jetts, and waterworks. A large cascade 30 or 40 feet broad, runs from under the pavement of the palace, and, in its egress, falls down large steps made of hewn stone, sloping about 20 or 30 feet: Then it flies over the entry of a large grotto, 16 or 18 feet perpendicular, upon a pavement of hewn stone, and, at last, loses itself in a very large circular bason, of at least 40 feet in diameter, ever full, but never overflowing: From the middle of which, springs up a splendid spout or jett of water, which rises to a great height; and is, I was told, larger than the famous one in France. Out of the water, much to my agreeable surprise, arose a dog and three ducks, made of copper or iron, and in appearance all alive: The ducks flutter through the water quacking, the dog follows after them barking. There is, in a subterraneous place, a charming chime of chrystal bells, which play by water. The grotto, of which I spoke, covered before with the cascade, has two entries, one at each side of it. The entries are guarded by statues, which, when you are in, prevent any getting out, till the keeper, by turning a handle, puts a stop to them. These statues evacuate so much water, by vomiting and shooting out of stone pistols and guns, that, the keeper said, it would

would founder any man. The bottom is of channel, interſperſed with a very great number of ſmall pipes, imperceptible to the unwary ſtranger. The keeper placed us in certain niches, where we could ſee every thing, and not a drop of water touch us. He then turned a handle, upon which theſe pipes played with very great force, ſo that the perpendicular jetts roſe near as high as the roof. The roof and walls were all covered with rock, and different ſorts of moſs. It would take up too much time to deſcribe the various pleaſure-houſes, and vegetables in this beautiful garden; wherefore I ſhall only add, that, beſides the curioſities before mentioned, there is a beautiful gallery full of the fineſt china in the world: At one end of which is a ſmall, but commodious room, with a bed in it, whither the Empreſs ſometimes retires to repoſe herſelf.

CHAP. XVIII.

Of Ranyboam, Ruſſian laws, nobility and gentry.

WEST on the gulf of Finland, about four miles from Peterhoff, ſtands the palace of Ranyboam, ſtraight ſouth from Cronſtadt. The palace was in my time but very indifferent; but it had a pleaſant proſpect from the gulf, and a fine quay for ſmall

veſſels

veſſels and boats; but as I ſaw nothing there worth notice, I ſhall ſay no more about it.

It is well known that the monarch is abſolute over the lives and fortunes of her ſubjects, of whatever condition they are, tho' few examples can be given, at leaſt in our days, of the perverſion or abuſe of that unlimited power. Individuals may ſuffer innocently; but that happens ſeldom, and commonly it proceeds from private piques, miſrepreſented by ſome of the monarch's favourites: But generally, either in the preſent or preceeding reign, the offenders are puniſhed moſt ſevere-ly; and the innocent, if alive, are not only re-inſtated, but ſhine with a diſtinguiſhed luſtre. If they be dead, then their children, or neareſt relations, ſucceed to all their wealth, and often are favourites: This is extremely natural, as will be elucidated by ſeveral inſtances in the following remarks.

Ancient families are very much reſpected; and whoever deſerves well, will be ſtill the more reſpected on that account, even by the Empreſs herſelf. Except titles, I know really no natural difference betwixt their nobility and gentry, as they have equal powers; and all honourable diſtinctions ariſe from their different perſonal ranks in the Empire. The noblemen and gentlemen are lords over their peaſants; and may at pleaſure puniſh them with whip and confiſcation, without giving any reaſon to any perſon: But they have

have no power over their lives; and therefore if, by excess of punishment, any of them should happen to die, their lords must even satisfy justice, by submitting to be hanged. The peasants, as hath been said, are absolute slaves to their lords; and yet, tho' it may seem surprising, they are satisfied with their slavery. They commonly have good warm houses to live in: They have as much land as they can labour, and as much pasturage as they can store with cattle, without paying a farthing for it. They are obliged to work four days in six for their lords, and have two days in the week for themselves: But their lords often reap where they do not sow; for when any of them appear to thrive and prosper, and to rise above his neighbour, his lord and master soon reduces him to equality, by levying a loan from him, never to be paid. Their lords can transplant them when and where they please, or sell them, either with or without their lands, to any person: And frequently it happens that they buy themselves; that is, they get a good friend, or merchant, to buy them from their lord at a certain price, which the boor refunds, and then enters into the community of merchants. They take all care to promote matrimony early. They cannot force marriage by law, but if two be recommended, one to the other, by their lords or their factors, there is seldom any objection made; nor is this to be wondered at, as the

person,

perſon, who declined the match, would afterwards live a moſt uneaſy life.

I have known young women of 20 years of age married to a boy of nine or ten: The reaſon given for this is, that the boy being a poor orphan, the girl is able, by her work, to maintain him till he is of years; and if they had any cattle when married, they would probably increaſe to a good ſtock by the time he is major. If the woman proves with child, before it is thought natural for the huſband to be the father of it, ſtill, as ſhe has a huſband, no notice is taken of it; but probably the prieſt may give her ſome private penance. The ceremony of marriage and conſummation is not ſo ridiculous as it formerly was ſaid to have been. The bride does not preſent her bridegroom with the whip. The bride and bridegroom are married in preſence of their friends and relations at church; thereafter they return home and make merry with their gueſts; and, at the uſual time of night, go to bed, when their friends leave them till next day. In ſhort every thing is carried on with as great decorum and modeſty as with us. And I never heard that the men treated their wives but with the greateſt tenderneſs and affection. One great occaſion why they are young married, is, that their children may be able, if neceſſary, to ſupport them in their old age. I am of opinion, there cannot be produced many examples in Ruſſia, that children

dren ever did or durſt ſuffer their parents to pine in want, whilſt they themſelves lived in plenty. One remarkable inſtance, however, of the want of filial affection, I ſhall here relate: A peaſant, a common ſoldier in the guards, behaved himſelf ſo well in many actions, ſome of them under the eye of the Great Peter, that, notwithſtanding his native obſcurity, and an entire ignorance of his parents, he was made captain of the guards, a rank equal to a lieutenant colonel in the field regiments. His father, a peaſant, on the borders of Siberia, and in great want, got a paſſport for St Peterſburgh; and hoping to be kept by his ſon in eaſy circumſtances, ſold off his poor pittance; and after a fatiguing journey, at laſt arrived in that city. He ſoon learned where his ſon lived, and aſked the centinel at the gate, to get ſome perſon to acquaint him, (who, at that time, had ſome company at his houſe,) that his father longed to ſee him. The ſoldiers, gathered together, ſcoffed and derided the poor old man; for the captain had given himſelf out for a gentleman by birth. The noiſe made in the court, ſoon brought out the ſervants, and at laſt the captain and his company, to ſee what was the matter. The captain ordered his old father to be beaten with rods, and turned out to the ſtreet. This did not fail to aſſemble a multitude of people, amongſt whom there happened to be a writer, who carried the old

man

man to a houſe, and, for a ſmall conſideration, drew out a petition, humbly repreſenting his caſe, and adviſed him to wait near the palace next day, at a certain place by which the Emperor uſually paſſed, and then to hold up his petition to his Majeſty. Next morning, as the Emperor paſſed by in a two wheeled-chaiſe, attended only by a footman, and obſerving the old man, he ſtopped, took his petition, read it inſtantly, and commanded him to be on the parade next morning, at a certain hour, telling him that the ſoldiers on duty ſhould have orders not to moleſt him. Every thing happened as the Emperor had ordered; and at the old man preſenting himſelf to the Emperor, he ordered the guards to form a circle, and commanded the captain's preſence. He then aſked the captain, Whether he was not born in ſuch a village; and whether of ſuch parentage? And commanded that on pain of death he ſhould tell him the truth, for he was determined to know his birth. The captain, conſidering that the Emperor would certainly diſcover it, and that the conſequence of diſſembling and putting him to ſo much trouble might not only be fatal, but probably provoke him to inflict a painful and ignominious death, fell at his feet, confeſſed the whole, and aſked pardon. Upon this, that wiſe and wonderful Prince called for his dubine, (this was an oak ſtick kept in a ſcarlet cloath, and always carried

by a ſervant) with which he uſed inſtantly to puniſh ſlight offences with his own hand. This dubine he delivered into the old man's hand, and commanded him to uſe it as a father ought to do to diſobedient and ungrateful children. The old man pauſed, and told the Emperor he could not ſtrike his ſon while he had on him the uniform of the guards. This was agreeable to the Emperor, who ordered the captain to put off theſe incumbrances, when the father chaſtiſed his unnatural ſon with ſuch wholeſome ſeverity, that the Emperor at laſt deſired him to ſpare his captain, and ordered one half of his ſalary to be applied to the maintenance of the old man, and, with a firm tone, told the byſtanders that what they had juſt now ſeen done was agreeable to the laws of God and the Empire, and that he was determined that theſe laws ſhould, without regard to diſtinction of office, or dignity of deſcent, be put in execution againſt every one who durſt tranſgreſs them. At the ſame time, he acknowledged that the captain was a brave officer, and that if he continued to behave well, he would endeavour to forget his unnatural crime, and advance him in the army according to the regulations, and his merit.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIX.

Institution of Companies of Merchants, &c.

PETER instituted, in every one of his cities, companies of merchants, subject only to burgomasters, bailies, or aldermen and their counsellors; but these people, formerly peasants, and raised from that rank to posts of power and honour, could not contain themselves within the bounds of moderation; wherefore this regulation was discontinued either in Peter's reign, or in that of some of his successors: But it was afterwards re-established, as will appear in the course of this work.

From what hath been said, it is easy to see a fine system of order and regularity in the Russian governments, but, being absolute, the people are sometimes subject to terrible oppressions, which, however, cannot be charged on the general plan, or the wise regulations of the great father of this vast empire, but on weak princes, and wicked ministers, who commonly pervert power, mislead the prince, and oppress the people.

The Russians, formerly savage, but now civilized, are a brave, and virtuous people, their manners mild, and their judges just; nor are there in the world better officers and bolder men. Merit in Russia is the sure road to preferment, and none but men are admitted

admitted into poſts of honour and conſideration: Boys, or milk ſops, however nobly born, have no chance in the army or navy, nor can family-influence prefer them.

In Ruſſia nothing pleaſed me more than their eaſy and elegant civility and diſcretion to ſtrangers, a virtue this for which all ranks are remarkable. In Ruſſia too, acceſs to juſtice is exceeding eaſy and inexpenſive, and it but rarely happens that the injured are not repaired.

Rudeneſs is ſcarce known in Ruſſia, nor is this to be wondered at, as the Great Peter in one of his regulations expreſsly enjoins due deference to be paid to all degrees of men; hence every perſon lives in peace, in quiet and ſecurity.

Britons juſtly boaſt of the Britiſh conſtitution, but it is a groſs abuſe of it to conſider that of any other nation with contempt; a practice, however, which but too often occurs. The author, partial to his country, joins in general in its juſt praiſe, but the gentle reader will, he humbly hopes, have him forgiven if he ſhould here regret a grievous defect in our police, which deſerves conſideration.

I had a younger brother whom I brought up under my own eye, and who ſerved in all the late wars in America and the Weſt Indies, and bravely fell in driving off the enemy from a hill which covered the Moro caſtle,

caſtle, which he effected with a ſmall number of his brave countrymen in the Royal. His colonel, a general officer, wrote a polite letter, now in my poſſeſſion, condoling with his aged parents, and has it in theſe memorable words: "I heartily condole with Lieutenant Cook's aged parents, they have had a great loſs in their ſon, but the Royal has alſo received a very remarkable loſs of a brave gallant officer."

It was expected, and one ſhould think, not without reaſon, that Lieutenant Cook's heirs would have received ſome ſmall ſhare, or pittance of the booty got at the Havannah; but his friends were diſappointed, though it is certain, he loſt his life not by accident, or by acting improperly, but in bravely and exactly obeying the orders of his ſuperiors. Indeed, if he had ſurvived the taking of that city, his proportion of the booty would not have been a premium, as every one knows that the diſtribution of it was remarkbly partial and unequal, repugnant to every juſt and proper regulation. Gentlemen, who are intruſted with a command, deſerve, no doubt, the firſt diſtinction in dignity and emolument; but it will be hard to find a police or political arithmetic, ſufficient to warrant a ſcheme of diviſion, by which one or two got all, and 20,000 men got in a manner, nothing. A police ſo partial and improper, ſhould, with ſubmiſſion, be amended;

for

for however officers, unwilling to disturb the public peace, may find it convenient to connive at such an oeconomy, it has a natural tendency to repress ardour, and extinguish emulation; and therefore though gentlemen will ever do their duty, yet great efforts cannot be expected, nor glorious exploits be performed.

CHAP. XX.

What happened at Petershoff, and elsewhere.

HAVING made some general remarks upon the government, religion, and policy of Russia, I shall relate particulars as they occur in the course of my travels. Next morning after I arrived in St Petersburgh, I went to the Medicine Chancery with my landlord, and produced the letter from Cronstadt to the Archiator. The secretary received it, but told me that the Archiator was at Peterhoff, and was not expected till the Court returned, which was very uncertain: But advised me to go and wait on him there.

Accordingly, having hired horses, I next day set out with a Russian, with whom I could have no conversation. When we arrived, I dismissed my Russian, and walked towards the palace into the garden on the south, where I saw the guards encamped on the banks of a beautiful canal, with their officers

ficers ſuperb tents next the palace. I ſpoke to many people, but I was underſtood by none. I walked till I was quite tired and well appetiſed, when I left this pleaſant garden, not knowing where to go, nor to whom to apply. At laſt, it was my good fortune to ſpeak to a German, a butler, very well dreſſed. He told me that he had been in England, aſked me When I arrived? with many other queſtions; and very civilly deſired I would go to his lodgings and accept of a collation. I was no way averſe to that, and indeed he gave me plenty of meats, exceedingly well dreſſed, and as much Burgundy as I cared for, and rather more. He told me that he had no acquaintance of the Archiator, but that a ſurgeon to her Majeſty, a countryman of mine, would be at Peterſhoff next day, and that I ſhould be very welcome to a bed in his lodgings, as I would be very ill accommodated in the neighbouring village.

He favoured me with the knowledge of many things, and expreſſed his ſurprize that I had walked in the garden covered, without being affronted. He aſſured me that none were allowed to paſs by the Empreſs's windows, but with their hats under their arms, and therefore imagined that the Empreſs had probably ſeen me, and given charge not to moleſt me: Probably this was true, for I had obſerved many chevaliers in their orders, and

others walking as he deſcribed them, but I looked upon them as fine gentlemen of rank and fortune juſt amuſing themſelves.

For all his kindneſs I returned him my unfeigned thanks, and begged him to accept of ſome money for my good entertainment. At this he ſmiling ſaid, that he ſold nothing; and that none who had the honour to ſerve the Empreſs durſt take any thing for any little civility they might have in their power to ſhew to ſtrangers.

I then told him that I wanted to go for Cronſtadt, and that I would return next morning if I could get a boat. He immediately went with me through the north garden to a key opening into the frith, and got me a place in a ten oared barge, in company with two gentlemen, with whom he ſpoke.

We immediately put off, and ſoon reached our port: The ſailors rowed extremely well; I underſtood they belonged to Admiral Gordon. I attempted to ſpeak with the gentlemen, but we could not underſtand one another, as they underſtood neither Latin nor Engliſh. They were, however, extremely polite, offering me a piece of ſuggared muſk-melon, very delicious, and alſo a ſhare of their wine.

Next morning early, I hired a boat and went for Ranyboam: That palace is four or five miles ſouth from Cronſtadt, a moſt agreeable ſituation. From the windows, one has

has a view of Cronſtadt city, with all the ſhipping, and a very extenſive ſheet of water in the gulf of Finland. From this I walked to Peterſhoff being only three or four miles diſtant. Peter the Great took much delight in Ranyboam, and, if he had lived longer, would have made it more beautiful than even Peterſhoff. It was in Ranyboam, Peter the third was ſeized by his barbarous and traiterous ſubjects.

CHAP. XXI.

A Continuation of what happened at Peterſhoff.

AT my arrival I went to Mr Lewis Calderwood's lodgings, one of the houſehold ſurgeons who had come from St Peterſburgh to change with another ſurgeon, a German called Menzies. After I had acquainted him with my buſineſs, we breakfaſted together, and he immediately introduced me to the Archiator, one Dr Fiſher a Livonian. It was eaſy to ſee that he aſſumed great ſtate, and Mr Calderwood adviſed me to give him the title of Excellence, which I did not forget. He ſpoke in Latin very elegantly, and after having aſked me a great number of queſtions, he adviſed me to teach ſurgery, telling me that though my education that way might be very good, yet he could not think my expe-

perience could be great, conſidering my youth; and in ſhort that he would grant me a good ſalary and horſe, ſervants, and firewood.

I returned him my moſt reſpectful acknowledgments for the care he expreſſed for me, and candidly confeſſed that though my experience could not be called extenſive, I had yet made as good uſe of my time as was in my power, and that I was ready to perform any piece of ſurgery, which he ſhould appoint. I told him, that a long and lingering diſeaſe had reduced me to what he ſaw, and which might cauſe him think me younger than I really was. But I aſſured him that though I had come to Ruſſia to have the honour to ſerve the Empreſs, and was ready to go any where, yet I was determined never to commence ſchoolmaſter, for two principal reaſons; the firſt was that a ſedentary life would never give me the ſmalleſt chance of recovering my loſt health; and the next was, that I had a natural averſion from that way of life, and never could bring myſelf to ſubmit to the drudgery of it.

At this he ſmiled, ſpoke ſomewhat to Mr Calderwood in the German language, and ſaid to me that he would immediately order my examination, and that when he ſhould arrive in St Peterſburgh, which would be in a few days, we ſhould talk more about it. We then retired; I dined with Meſſrs Calder-

wood

wood and Menzies, and returned the ſame day to St Peterſburgh with Mr Menzies, who, on the road favoured me with many a fine advice how I ſhould behave.

He told me, under ſecrecy, never to engage but by contract, nor to ſign any papers till ſome of my countrymen had explained their contents. He ſaid that people ſpoke but little there, and that a word to the wiſe was ſufficient. In two or three days thereafter I was brought to my examination before nine gentlemen, but only two of them could ſpeak Latin; however one of them interpreted to the reſt, and from them to me. Having finiſhed it, they told me that they had little to ſay againſt my qualifications but that as I ſeemed very young they could not think my experience could be great. They examined me on anatomy, ſurgery, medicine and pharmacy. They propoſed ſundry diſeaſes and cauſed me write ſuch medicines, *&c.* as I thought fit for ſuch complaints, and very politely diſmiſſed me after they had kept me about three hours: However they gave me a few glaſſes of wine, and allowed, nay entreated me to ſit down. My landlord, who was very obliging, told me that the examiners were very well pleaſed with my anſwers.

At the Archiator's arrival, I was ſent for, he told me that it would be very agreeable to him if I would engage only for two or three years to teach ſurgery. This I abſolutely refuſed,

fused, and insisted on serving one year at least in St Petersburgh, either in the fleet or in the hospitals; he said that could not be granted, because he had already engaged five more than the ordinary number in the fleet, that the hospitals were over complement, but that, rather than I should return, he would send me to a good garrison, or to one of the armies then acting against the Turks, which I declined, took my leave, and resolved to return home.

CHAP. XXII.

The Author engageth in the Russian Service.

I IMMEDIATELY applied to Mr Rowndox the British Resident for a passport, who sent a memorial by me to the college of foreign affairs. They told me to make my appearance to-morrow, and every day after that, I got the same answer, and this continued till I went to Mr Bell of Antermony, told him that the British shipping were all going home, and I must be left, if I could not get home directly, in which case I should be obliged to submit to any agreement they might think proper. That truly worthy gentleman went with me; and expostulated with them so effectually, that they told him they were forbid granting a passport by a memorial

memorial from the Medicine Chancery. Upon this, Mr Bell procured a positive message from Mr Rowndox to the chancery, in which, as I was informed, amongst other things, he said that if the Chancery offered to stop my returning home, on the morrow he was to wait upon the Empress, and would not fail to lay the affair before her Majesty. This had the effect; the Chancery was so uneasy at such a resolute declaration, that they sent for me by the time I got to my lodging, and granted my demands the 30th day of September.

The Archiator told me that he would have a care of me, and be as a parent, providing I did not neglect my business, but acted according to the regulations. I bowed before him, but humbly observed that it could not be expected I could, as if I was inspired, know the regulations; because I was not only a stranger, but could neither read nor speak their language: At this he laughed, and said all that he meant by regulations at present, was only to attend the hospital, where I was going to be settled, twice every day; and in difficult cases to ask the advice of the physicians and surgeons.

This I ackowledged was most reasonable, and I assured him that I would pledge my life for the faithful performance of it.

He said he had sent orders to the supreme surgeon in the sea-hospital to cause a lodging

to

to be got ready for me, that it would be right I ſhould go to him in a day or two, but that he had ordered to give me leave for one month to get all my affairs in order; and thus this affair ended to my ſatisfaction.

CHAP. XXIII.

The Author employed in the General Hoſpital.

I WAITED upon the ſupreme ſurgeon of the ſea-hoſpital Mr Engbrodt a Swediſh priſoner, in company with Mr Selkirk ſurgeon to the guards. Mr Engbrodt, received me very politely, and told us that he had got orders about me, he ſaid that I might board myſelf at the gardener's, where all the gentlemen batchelors in both hoſpitals were provided with dinner and ſupper, and that I ſhould always be welcome to his table, when it was convenient for me. He adviſed me to be ſure to make my repair to the hoſpital preciſely at the end of the month; becauſe, whatever inclination he might have to befriend me, it would not be in his power; becauſe he was obliged to make out regular reports and ſend them to the Chancery once, at leaſt, every week; that though the Archiator might overlook it, yet it could add nothing to my character to begin my ſervice with neglect of duty. I anſwered him, that I did

I did not intend to take half the time the Archiator had been graciously pleased to grant me, and therefore desired he would give orders to have my lodgings soon put in order. I then took my leave, and in eight or ten days thereafter, entered upon my employ. In justice to the gentlemen in both hospitals, I must here confess that from them I received many and signal civilities.

I was also allowed a young gentleman, Mr Rosen, who spoke Latin well, to go with me as my interpreter when I visited the sick. I closely attended the anatomical preparations, and, when the work amongst my patients was over, I scarcely was ever out of the dissecting chamber. I had not followed business above a fortnight when Mr Hanhast professor of anatomy, a Swiss, who had ever shewed me great friendship, and one of the best anatomists in Europe, came to my chamber, and begged of me as a mighty favour, that I would prepare the lesson for next day, in regard he had some business of much importance to transact that day in the city.

I answered that few things could give me greater pleasure than to serve him, from whom I had received so many marks of friendship; that I was truly proud of his thinking me fit for such employment; and that it would be most agreeable to me, if he would frequently honour me with it. He gave me the lesson, which I got ready long before

before night. Next day I was preſent when the cadaver was brought into the theatre. Mr Hanhaſt viewed my work very carefully, and, as I was told by Mr Roſen, ſaid a great deal in my favour. At the end of his diſcourſe he aſked me, If I was willing to prepare the leſſons with or without his aſſiſtance as occaſion might require? I anſwered, nothing could give me greater pleaſure: Whereupon he read an order to the gentlemen in the hoſpital, letting them know that I was diſcharged from all buſineſs in the hoſpital, except when I chuſed to help, and that I was appointed by the Medicine Chancery ſolely to prepare the leſſons: But I never neglected viſiting the ſick, though I was appointed to no particular ward, by this means I had it in my option to viſit all the wards, without being a ſlave to any. Soon after this, the Archiator arrived to viſit the hoſpitals, he ſent for me, and ſaid that he was well pleaſed with me, and would not forget to do for me better, I returned him thanks for what he had done, and retired. When he was gone, the profeſſor told me that the Archiator's ſon was to ſtudy anatomy in our hoſpital, adviſed me to make ſome preparations for him, and when he ſhould be in the diſſecting chamber that I ſhould ſhew him any part he deſired to be informed of. I took this in very good part, and immediately ſet to work, injected and prepared an eye with all its muſcles, arteries,

teries, veins and nerves, alſo a heart, and varniſhed them: I got the ſmall bones of the ear joined together in their natural ſituation within the cavity, carefully ſawn aſunder, and at different times I preſented him with theſe factitious affairs.

He frequently invited me to viſit him, but I always excuſed myſelf. Thus I lived much to my own ſatisfaction till March 15th 1737, when I very unexpectedly got orders to repair to the galley-haven and attend the ſick in that place; becauſe one ſurgeon was dead, and the other ſo far gone in a conſumption that he could do but little ſervice. Mr Hanhart expreſſed rather a greater diſſatisfaction than I did: He told me that he intended to go to Leyden for one year, and take out his degrees as phyſician: For which he undoubtedly was well qualified. That he had told the Archiator of this long ago, and that he had recommended me to ſupply his place: With all which, the Archiator ſeemed very well pleaſed. He ſaid, that he did not altogether deſpair but this might happen; becauſe he was certain the Chancery ſcarcely knew what to do for qualified ſurgeons, as there was a daily loſs of them in the armies. He ſaid, that he hoped that was the Archiator's intention, becauſe I was ſent to no diſtance, and to be in a fixed place.

With regret I left this hoſpital, and the ſame day made my appearance at the galley-

haven to the reſiding commander in chief, who was a Greek, and, what is far better, a good man. He was about 60 years of age: I was much taken with him, and he daily invited me to his houſe. He was very ſober and diſcreet, had only one daughter, a pretty lady about 17, and ſhe was as complaiſant as her father, who doated on her. I was ſo well received by this good old man that I had very near forgot the hoſpital, and indeed I lived in good friendſhip with all the inferior officers. I was appointed a boat with four oars to uſe as I pleaſed. Many officers and our general lived in the city, but it was my duty to go at leaſt once a week to viſit our ſick in the general ſea-hoſpital: For although there was a ſmall hoſpital in the galley-haven, yet, by the regulations, I was ordered to ſend all patients, whoſe diſeaſes would take a long time to cure to St Peterſburgh. Our hoſpital was conſidered only as a place prepared for ſudden ailments and accidents.

Next day I waited upon our general, an old man, and a Ruſs, whoſe name was Ivan Golovine. He received me very well. His adjutant deſired I would take a glaſs of wine with him in his apartment, to which I agreed, and he told me that our commander was a man of no merit, and remarkably obſtinate.

He

He ſaid that he was indeed of a good family, and that was his only qualification; for there was not a ſingle action that he ever did, or indeed could do, for the good of the Empire, and he was beſides altogether illiterate.

This adjutant was a German, and a good ſcholar. He told me that Peter the Great ſent for our general when he was young, and having been told of his character, deſired him to live in the palace, or ſerve in his armies or fleet. The anſwer he gave to the Emperor was, that he wiſhed he would know him no better than the late Emperor his father knew his Golovine's father. At this time it pleaſed the Emperor, and he wanted ſuch people about him who without fear or flattery, would tell him what they knew.

Peter the Great appointed him an officer in the galleys, which he never commanded in perſon, and ſoon afterwards advanced him to the rank of general, but kept him conſtantly about his perſon. He ſaid, at Karitzin when the Emperor was going to proſecute his war in Perſia, this general was miſſing two or three days, nor could the Emperor get notice where he was; but as he was much given to drink, ſuppoſed he might be in ſome common houſe. The Emperor to find out where he was, and alſo to puniſh his pride, cauſed the drums to beat through the city, and at certain places, cauſed the

crier

crier to make known to the inhabitants, that the general of the galleys was loſt; and therefore ordered that whoever knew of him, ſhould immediately make diſcovery, without loſs of time, offering a reward to the diſcoverer of three farthings, but threatening puniſhment to any who ſhould dare to conceal him.

This had the effect: It rouſed him: He inſtantly deſerted his drunken companions, went to the Emperor, and expoſtulated with him about affronting in ſo public a manner an officer of his rank, threatening at the ſame time that he would be revenged.

This pleaſed the Emperor, for he kept him by way of a buffoon, and conſequently allowed him all liberty of ſpeech. The Emperor uſed to take an hour's ſleep after dinner which is the cuſtom in theſe countries: He loved the fleet as is well known to exceſs.

A fleet of ſmall veſſels at that time lay at Tzaritz and, while he was ſleeping in one of them, Golovine ordered all the bells in the city to be rung, and at the ſame time to make an alarm with all the drums; which in Ruſſia, is a certain ſign of ſomething extraordinary.

The Emperor diſturbed out of his ſleep, made enquiry at the officers on board concerning the cauſe of this alarm. They all ſaw there was no fire in the city, but could not conceive what was the matter; wherefore the Emperor went to the commandant

mandant to enquire. He knew as little of the cauſe as his Majeſty, but ſaid that the general of the galleys had given ſuch orders: All ſearch was made for him, but he was not to be found.

At laſt Golovine, who perfectly knew the Emperor's way, ſtayed ſo long till he thought the Emperor would be pleaſed to ſee him again, he was only hid in an old caſk which was in the houſe where the Emperor reſided when in town. He told the Emperor that was the revenge he took for the affront he had given him.

The Emperor's anger being over, Golovine got off, but was ſeriouſly adviſed never more to adventure on ſuch daring actions, leſt he might ſuffer the loſs of his head. Many ſuch ſtories were told of him, but this is ſufficient to ſhew that the man was admired only for his folly and impertinence.

The Empreſs Anne took pleaſure in plaguing him, and the more rude he expreſſed himſelf to her, ſhe liked him the better, however the greateſt lord durſt not affront him; for, though he could do little or no good, he was yet able to do, and had done, much harm.

The galley-haven is truly a pleaſant fortreſs: It is ſituated on the weſt end of Vaſilie Oſtroff on the eaſt end of the gulph of Finland, and communicates with St Peterſburgh with a proſpective cut through the woods. I was told there were 200 galleys kept here, and

and I believe there are not many fewer. I have frequently ſeen them, though I never numbered them. They are drawn out of the water and kept under ſhades in the winter, but they are eaſily launched, when needful. The garriſon keeps a good look-out, and will permit none to enter without orders from the main-guard, though men of diſtinction, and acquainted with all the officers.

CHAP. XXIV.

The Author receives orders to march. Great conflagrations in St Petersburgh, and the criminals puniſhed.

ONE day Mr Farcharſon Profeſſor of Aſtronomy came from the Academy to drink tea with me, but, although all the younger officers had ſtudied under him, and particularly the gentlemen at that time on guard, whom he well knew, he could not get admittance till the commander gave orders. Indeed the Captain ran to the gate, and conducted his old regent with great deference to my houſe. When ſeated, the good old profeſſor told him, that he was glad to have lived ſo long as to ſee many gentlemen in the fleet, formerly his pupils, of diſtinguiſhed learning, who could preſcribe laws to him. Compliments on both ſides were not wanting. I ſpent my time in this pleaſant place, and

and amongſt agreeable company, only till the beginning of Auguſt, when one morning I was ſurprized with an order from the Medicine Chancery for me to attend the admiralty, and get ready to march to a village on the river Don called Cotcholoff, diſtant about 30 or 40 miles from Aſoph, which now was in poſſeſſion of the Ruſſian army.

I acknowledge it ſurpriſed me not a little, yet after reflection I found that I had no reaſon to complain, ſince I had lived in St Peterſburgh one year. But, before I enter upon my travels, I again muſt ſay I never had ſpent a year ſo pleaſantly as at this place, nor did I ever meet with any thing incommodious during that whole time, nor any thing which could give uneaſineſs to any of my agreeable neighbours, except two very terrible conflagrations in the city of St Peterſburgh.

The firſt happened in May or June, and burnt down many fine palaces, beſides her Majeſty's great diſpenſary, and the Medicine Chancery in that ſtreet called the Milion. The other burnt down ſome hundreds of houſes, moſtly indeed of timber, in that part of the city called the Little Morſkoy.

Here I was preſent, and happened to ſtand by the ſide of a canal near a great brick houſe belonging to a prince, all in flames. The roof was fallen in, and few of the byſtanders were taking any notice of it, when it ſud-

denly

denly blew up with ſuch a ſhock as made the earth tremble where we ſtood.

The day was ſerene, little wind, but very hot, but in an inſtant we were all covered with ſo thick a ſmoke, that the ſun could not be ſeen for ſome time: In a minute however, after the blaſt, or leſs time, many chairs, tables, and other pieces of furniture, ſome of them half burnt, fell from the air into the canal adjoining, without hurting any one perſon. It was indeed fortunate that none of them fell on the other ſide of the canal where were very large and coſtly magazines of hemp, ropes, cables, pitch, tar, *&c.* belonging to the Empreſs, for had the fire reached that magazine, all the Engliſh merchants houſes and the Admiralty would have been deſtroyed.

It was found out that the fire was ſet to the houſes in different ſtreets at once, ſo that the poor inhabitants could ſcarcely ſave any thing, and before any help could come, the whole Morſkoy was in flames. Three incendiaries were taken, two men and a woman, theſe I ſaw executed a few days thereafter, in the ruins of the Morſkoy. The men were each chained to the top of a large maſt fixed in the ground; they ſtood upon ſmall ſcaffolds and many thouſand billets of wood were built from the ground, ſo as to form a pyramid round each maſt. Theſe pyramids were ſo high as to reach within two or three fathoms of the little ſtages on which the men

ſtood

ſtood in their ſhirts, and their drawers. They were condemned in this manner to be burnt to powder: But before the pyramids were ſet on fire, the woman was brought betwixt theſe maſts, and a declaration of their villany, and the order for their execution, read. The men called out loudly, that, though they were guilty, yet the woman was innocent, however the woman's head was chopped off. For they never expoſe the perſons of women, either by hanging or burning, let their crime be what it will. Poſſibly had the Empreſs Anne been at Peterſburgh, the woman would have been pardoned; it was ſaid however, that the proof was very clear, and that the woman knew, that the villains were determined to commit this horrid crime, ſome days before it happened.

No ſooner was the woman's head chopped off, than a link was put to the wooden pyramids, and as the timber was very dry, it formed in an inſtant a very terrible fire: The men would ſoon have died had not the wind frequently blown the flames from them; however, they both expired in leſs than three quarters of an hour, in great torment.

An accident happened at this execution, which amuſed many people. Immediately after the men were dead, a young airy writer, very neatly dreſſed, was running through the ruins, in order to ſee the execu-

tion: The whole ground was coverd with the charcoal from the late conflagration, ſo that none were ſafe to go any where but on the paved ſtreets: As the Ruſſians are obliged to keep their ſtreets and houſes ſweet and clean: Every houſe has conveniences for that purpoſe, and the poor writer, gazing at the criminals, as he haſtened towards the place of execution, plumped into one of theſe above the middle. Many of the guards, and others, not ſatisfied with ſcoffing and laughing at the unfortunate writer, threw into the filth pieces of burnt wood, bricks and ſtones, with a view to ſplaſh him all over. Such treatment ſharpened the ingenuity of the diſtreſſed writer, and fired his reſentment to the highest pitch.

As they were very near him, he threw plenty of the fetid ſtuff about him, bedaubed many, and forced them to retreat to a greater diſtance, by which means he got out without great interruption, but his rage was ſo great, that inſtead of going home, he run amongſt the guards, who he imagined were the cauſe of the ludricous condition he was expoſed to. Many of them he bedaubed, well knowing they would not eſcape puniſhment for having their cloaths ſo damaged: Indeed I believe the Ruſſian guards were never put to ſuch a ſhameful flight.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXV.

Anecdotes during the Author's ſtay in St Petersburgh; Coins, Weights and Meaſures.

MANY very entertaining and magnificent fireworks were exhibited on the river Neva, and grand illuminations for the ſucceſs of the Ruſſian arms againſt the Turks, ſo expenſive and grand that many people ſkilled in ſuch works, ſaid that they did not believe the like had ever been ſeen in any part of Europe: The rockets were terrible. The charge of each large one was ſaid to weigh an extraordinary weight, and when they had riſen to an immenſe height in the air, they burſt with an exploſion equal to that of a large cannon, and exhibited many fire balls, of various colours, falling down to the earth: A great variety of wheels, and many other things whoſe names I am unacquainted with, were played off, ſo that in midnight, one might have ſeen as clearly as in mid-day. The grand illuminations were placed on a large timber building of two ſtories high, and a great length, erected on the north ſide of the river oppoſite the winter palace. The lamps exhibited flames of different colours, repreſenting the laſt city or fortification taken from the Turks, ſuch as Aſoph, Perecop, Kinburn,

burn, Kinbam, *&c.* Before the fire works were played off, there was erected upon the river a large tall maſt, on which was hung a white ſheet of cloath, as broad as the ſail of the largeſt ſhip of war, but longer, fire was put to this as the ſignal for beginning: The flame ran up the ſheet inſtantly like a flaſh of lightening, but left upon it the figure of the city, for the honour of which the works were to be played off, in a deep and gloſſy fire which continued ten or twelve minutes, before the ſheet was deſtroyed. Whilſt the ſpectators were obſerving this figure, all the lamps were expeditiouſly lighted, which, as was ſaid, exhibited the ſame figure, but in a much more extenſive ſpace, and theſe continued burning the whole time, and even longer than the fireworks laſted. As the timber galleries were upwards of two hundred foot long, the regularity and diſpatch in performing theſe wonderful works no doubt ſurpriſed me, and they had much the ſame effect upon people more acquainted with them.

As I was a ſtranger, and neither underſtood the manner nor language of the people, I laid down a plan of behaviour, which was to remark the ordinary cuſtoms of the people, and to uſe all the gentle ways in my power to make them underſtand me. I meant no ill, and never to ſhew anger or reſentment, but with a reſolution to put my threats in as compleat execution as I was able, and to go as little out

in

in the night time as I could, which I doubt not was the cauſe of my eſcaping many troubles and affronts at firſt.

I ſhall make two or three remarks of what happened to me during my ſtay at St Peterſburgh. I went into the great ſquare before the ſummer palace to ſee the firſt regiment of guards exerciſed called Preprofenſky, conſiſting of betwixt five and 600 men. I walked towards a canal which ſurrounds the palace and gardens, in order to get behind the guards, and get out of the croud.

Looking up the canal, I eſpied on the oppoſite ſide a magnificently rich tent, the firſt time I ſaw the Empreſs, accompanied with a great number of ladies and gentlemen. It was eaſy to know her by the reſpectful diſtance the ladies and gentlemen kept; the gentlemen were all uncovered, I thought it could not be taken ill, if I went a little nigher to get a view of the Empreſs and court, but walked very cautiouſly with my hat under my arm. A lord called out and made a motion with his hand towards me, and thinking I had tranſgreſſed, was going off, but with my eyes fixed on the Court, when I obſerved the Empreſs turn, and heard her ſpeak; at which, the ſame perſon moved down the ſide of the canal nearer to me, and ſpoke, made motions, as I thought ſignifying that I ſhould come nearer to where the Court was. At firſt, I dared not, but by the many motions

tions he made, I ventured forward, though ſlowly, and had the ſatisfaction to ſee one of the grandeſt courts in the world. The Empreſs Anne was no beauty, but had ſomething ſo graceful and full of majeſty, that it had a ſtrange effect upon me; I, at the ſame time, both feared and revered her. The men were in the richeſt dreſs, and alſo the ladies, amongſt whom were many very exquiſite beauties: However I ſtole away, as imperceptibly and ſuddenly as I could.

The Princeſſes Elizabeth and Anne made very fine appearances and were both very beautiful.

At another time, I was invited to dine at Mr Selkirk's, who lived on the north ſide of the river, oppoſite the ſummer palace. I went to the common ferry, which I had upon former occaſions paſſed many times: A great number of people went into a boat, which I ſuppoſed was to croſs the river, but, to my diſappointment, carried me up the Neva to the eaſt of the palace, where I had never been: I payed my fare, went aſhore, and as I could not get to the other ſide, wandered about ſeeking my way to the city; but met with difficulties from canals, high walls, and blind ſtreets. At laſt, quite fatigued, I ſaw a gate open into a garden, and fine gravel walks, which afterwards I was informed was a garden and ſummer-houſe belonging to the Empreſs: Two granadiers

ſtood

ſtood centinels at that gate, who would not ſuffer me to enter: I then returned to the ſtairs where I had landed, expecting when a boat ſhould put off. The Ruſſians are the moſt dextrous at finding out, and relieving the want of ſtrangers, of any people, I believe, in the world. I had not ſtood long, when a waterman came and ſpoke to me, but I not knowing what he ſaid, pointed to the other ſide, and ſhewed him a handful of copper money: He pointed to his boat, took me by the hand, and carried me to the port I deſired, nor would he take ſo much money as I thought he deſerved; for they dare take no more than their fare.

Another time after the froſt had begun, I was walking under the ſhade at the great market-place, wanting to buy ſomewhat. At once, a Ruſſian merchant took hold of me by the arm, ſaying ſomething: He took a handful of ſnow, and was going to apply it to my face, when I twiſted myſelf from him, but by a certain gentleneſs in his deportment, and anxiety in his countenance, I ſubmitted, and he again ſeized me and rubbed one of my cheeks with ſnow till it glowed. I did not well know what to make of it, but was told at my return home, that my cheek was froſted, and that the Ruſſians never obſerve that in any perſon, but they immediately rub the part well with ſnow, which indeed I have

ſince

ſince experienced to be a ſafe and certain cure.

When I lived at the galley-haven, it was my duty daily to go and viſit the ſick officers who lived in the city, and ſometimes it was late before I could return. I had been warned to take care not to go on the Proſpective; becauſe many people had been robbed and murdered there in the night time, I therefore generally went through a private road in the woods at a diſtance from the Proſpective, A gentleman, lieutenant in the fleet, Mr Alexander Gordon having had ſome buſineſs in St Peterſburgh, and having a deſire to take his bed in my houſe, lived with me ſome weeks.

One night we were late together in the city, and propoſed to go home through the Proſpective, eſpecially as the night was not very dark. We had come near the end of the avenue, when four men ruſhed from the woods towards us: We both, reſolute enough, drew our ſwords and were determined neither to give nor receive quarters. The rogues obſerving that it would hazard their lives and a detection, ſuddenly retired again into the woods, leaving us a free paſſage into the galley-haven.

I was obliged to attend the admiralty in order to get my diſpatches and money for the journey, and horſes. Thus I had attended daily for three or four weeks, and every time

time applied to a ſecretary called Newleboff, a great rogue: His anſwer every time he ſaw me was, Zaftra, that is to ſay, to-morrow; not knowing the meaning of this, and that I might be blameable for not applying to others, I complained to one Gordon a ſecretary, and tranſlator for the Britiſh, alſo by the admiralty.

He declined meddling in this affair, as he was afraid of getting ill-will from the Ruſſian ſecretaries; but told me, that, notwithſtanding bribes were on pain of death, forbidden to be either offered or received, yet that ſecretary would ſcarcely do any thing, unleſs forced, or without ſome acknowledgment. He was of opinion, I ſhould go to the admiralty daily, and make ſigns to any gentleman I might ſee, and ſay what he had taught me. I no ſooner had got my leſſon, but I went, and it was my fortune to ſee the principal ſecretary, to whom I addreſſed myſelf in my jargon. Whilſt I was endeavouring to make him conceive what I meant, a gentleman came from the board to ſpeak with this ſecretary; neither of them could underſtand me; but this gentleman, who I afterwards learnt was procurator, took me by the hand, and led me to the board. An admiral, called Muſhiacoff, ſpoke to me in good Engliſh.

This gentleman had been long in England, and had frequently ſhewn much favour to Britiſh ſubjects: To him I laid open the whole

truth: He desired me to wait a little; and gave orders in the Russ language. Soon thereafter, Nelewboff appeared, when he observed I was there, he changed colours, and no doubt said somewhat for his excuse, whilst he was speaking, he frequently looked to me, and put on an angry and disdainful countenance. I imagined he was accusing me, and knowing it must be false, said in Russ, "Te chudoi cheloveck," which signifies that he was a very bad man. I did not know that I had exceeded in saying so to an officer, but the Lords of the Admiralty fell into an exceeding fit of laughing, and without more ado gave him orders.

Admiral Mushiacoff desired me to go with him, and told me he hoped there would be no more delay, but if there was, he ordered me to wait on the admiralty next day. Accordingly we went out together; when we came to the outer room where the principal secretary and writers were, at the sight of us they fell into an immoderate fit of laughter at Nelewboff and me, which seemed much to disturb him, and going through the admiralty yard, he stopped, spoke in passion, and threatened, at which I clapped my hand on my sword and wanted to return; on this he changed his tone, talked calmly, and in the most abject manner took me by the hand, led me to his apartment, sent for Gordon, and begged all animosity might be

be laid aſide, aſſuring me that things could not be furniſhed that day, but next morning they ſhould be ready.

For once he kept his word, and I was diſpatched without any further trouble. The admiralty, without my deſire, alſo ordered an old marine, who could ſpeak a medley of Engliſh and Hollands, which I had no difficulty to underſtand, to convoy me; this old ſoldier had been through that country in Peter the Great's time.

Before I leave this city, I imagine it will be agreeable to give ſome account of the money, weights and meaſures. The coin conſiſts of ducats of gold, rubles, half rubles, or poltines, quarter rubles, or chetwerte rubleoff, griveners or ten copeaks, and copeaks of ſilver, five copeaks, two copeaks, half copeaks or diniſhkas, and quarter copeaks or poluſhka of copper.

A Ruſs ducat is worth two rubles. A ruble is in our money much about four ſhillings and ſixpence, the denominations of half and quarter ruble expreſs their value; a grivener is the value of the tenth part of a ruble, as a copeak is the hundreth part. They alſo count by altines, which is at preſent no coin. An altine contains three copeaks. I never ſaw an account which mentions ducats. The higheſt denominations of money in their accounts are expreſt by a ſum of rubles.

Ruſſian

Ruſſian weights conſiſt of zolotnicks, lotes, ſunts or pounds, poods and berkewitz. A zolotnick weighs two penny-weight 17 grains 1 fourth Engliſh. Three zolotnicks make a lote; 32 lotes make a pound. The Ruſs pound is exactly apothecary weight; forty pounds make a pood; ten poods make a berkwitz, and 63 poods make a tun.

Liquid meaſure conſiſts of cruſkas, vedros, ſtakans, anchors and hogs. Eight cruſkas make a vedro, one and a half vedro make a ſtakan, two ſtakans make an anchor, ſix anchors make an hog, or, according to our language, hogſhead, which ſignifies the ſame thing, and is the ſame meaſure.

Dry meaſure conſiſts of vocemiks, chetvericks and chetworths: One chetverick contains four vocemicks, and one chetworth contains eight chetvericks, equal to 24 pecks, or ſix buſhels Engliſh.

CHAP. XXVI.

Concerning Ruſſian Meaſures of Extenſion.

THEIR meaſure of extenſion is thus divided and denominated; verſchock, archine, 28 inches, ſazen, verſt: An archine contains 16 equal parts, called verſchocks, a ſazen contains three archines, and a verſt is meaſured by 500 ſazens. As ſeven feet

feet Engliſh are nearly equal to a ſazen, a verſt is equal to 3500 feet, or 1140 ells Engliſh; one degree contains about 104 verſts, according to the meaſure of Picardy. In my travels through Ruſſia, I ſhall confine my meaſure to verſts, except in deſarts not meaſured, which are calculated only by hours, and this way of meaſuring is not very uncertain, providing you travel with the ſame horſes, and at an equal pace.

CHAP. XXVII.

The Author leaves St Petersburgh. Account of the Eams.

ON the 8th of September 1737, I left St Peterſburgh, and at four o'clock *P. M.* arrived at a village called Eamſkoi. It is a ſuburb to the city, where travellers get horſes, and all villages in Ruſſia, which by the law are obliged to keep horſes, are called Eams. Theſe villages have a grant of ſo much land as is ſufficient for their maintenance, and are therefore obliged to keep a number of horſes, particularly for the uſe of the army or fleet, and are ſatisfied to take ſmall wages for theſe in the ſervice of the Empire.

Every Eam has proper officers appointed to ſee that diſpatch be regularly given. They have alſo a cantoin in St Peterſburgh who ſuperintends

perintends all affairs belonging to these Eams; and takes care that gentlemen from the army or fleet do not distress them. But if it happen, that, upon any pretence, delay should be made in instantly getting the horses ready, the express, whether officer or common centinel, has a power to bring them to reason with a whip, not sparing their starosts or superiors.

A remarkable instance of this kind happened at the time of my first setting out: A serjeant was dispatched from the army to the cabinet; he rode day and night till he arrived at St Petersburgh. The Empress ordered him into her presence, to enquire particularly about the army, and observing the mark of a stroke upon his face, was pleased to ask the cause. He said, That the post-boy or eamshick, not riding fast enough, he therefore whipped his horse, and the boy gave him a stroke over the face. Upon this the post-boy was taken under arrest, and a certain number of eamshicks, or those post-people, were summoned to attend on a fixed day at St Petersburgh, from all the Eams betwixt Moscow and Petersburgh.

On the appointed day, the said post-boy was hanged, and an imperial decree sent through Russia, setting forth the crime and execution; and further declaring, that none, of what condition soever, should, upon any pretence whatever, molest, stop, or hinder any courier dispatched from the army or fleet,

to

to St Peterſburgh, or from the ſupreme cabinet to any province or city through the Empire; and that if eamſhicks ſhould in any manner hinder or ſtop any expreſs employed in the affairs of the Empire, ſuch delinquents ſhall ſuffer death.

Here two obſervations occur, with which I ſhall cloſe this chapter. Firſt, The abſolute nature of the Ruſſian government; and next, The ready ſervice that is given to its couriers, or diſpatches, from one end to the other of that vaſt Empire, than which nothing can more advantage the affairs of ſtate, eſpecially in times of war, and on other important emergencies.

CHAP. XXVIII.

What happened to the Author in his way to Moſcow.

AT this village 300 ſailors were ready to march with their proper officers early next morning for Aſoph. As I knew not any of them, I thought proper, with my old ſoldier, and two carriages, to proceed fifteen verſts further, where there is a ſmall village, and where a guard is kept to examine every one's paſſports. In this village I lodged, and proceeded on my journey early next morning; but had not travelled far, till I was overtaken

vertaken by the above-mentioned body of ſailors, driving in carts like Jehu. One horſe and cart were allotted for three ſailors. They ſoon paſſed me: However, I happened to dine at the ſame village where they were. As my ſoldier could ſpeak broken Engliſh, I went to their commander, acquainted him what I was, where I was going, and begged he would take me along with him, and order horſes to be got ready for me with thoſe belonging to his command, for which I ſhould readily pay my proportion. This he not only granted, but let the whole command know my profeſſion, that they might reſpect me as an officer belonging to themſelves, and ſhew me all civilities.

At the ſame time, he introduced a boatſwain, an Engliſhman, of whoſe company, though not very refined, I was truly glad. We marched from this village till we arrived, without any accident, at the Priſtan upon the banks of the river Volehoff, through a very woody country, but good roads and many villages, all the houſes of which were built of wood, and the ſtreets laid with the ſame materials. Every houſe of any conſequence has a great gate, which opens into a large ſquare covered deep with clean ſtraw, and built on every ſide with wooden walls and timber ſhades, which prevent rain from falling upon cattle or carriages; for they have no other ſtable. I imagine it is a good eaſy contri-

vance,

vance, and better for horſes than our ſtables, and although the froſt is exquiſitely intenſe in that country, yet their cattle have no other ſtable, nor have I ever heard that the cold hurts them, and they feed well.

The diſtance betwixt St Peterſburgh and Priſtan is 115 verſts: When we arrived there, the captain told me, That he was obliged to hire barks to carry his men to Novogorod, and that if I would go by water, I ſhould have a cabbin granted to Mr Rannie and me, for this was the boatſwain's name. I accepted of his offer, and was tranſported up the river to Novogorod, diſtant 67 verſts from Priſtan. I paid one copeak *per* verſt for one horſe, from St Peterſburgh to Priſtan, from Priſtan to Moſcow, and thence to Cotchalore, at the rate of ſix copeaks *per* ten verſts; but I'm informed that travelling is at preſent more expenſive.

The river Volehoff takes its riſe from the lake Ilmen, runs through the city of Novogorod, and diſembogues itſelf into the Ladoga lake. This river is extremely pleaſant, is well ſtored with a variety of fiſh, and has plenty of water-fowls. On its banks are many large and populous, many ſweet and pleaſant villages. The country is really moſt delightful, abounding with every thing fit for man and beaſt. The ſoil appears to be light, but very fertile, and the only agriculture there, is that of turning up the clod.

Novogorod Velike, or the great Novogorod, is ſaid to have formerly been a very great city, and indeed it is very probable it was ſo. It was ſaid to have been deſtroyed by Ivan Vaſilytch the tyrant, with ſuch fury and unheard of cruelty, that I ſhall neither pain my reader with ſuch cruel relations, nor help to perpetuate the memory of ſuch a monſter.

There are ſaid to be no leſs than nearly 200 monaſteries and churches in this city. I ſcarcely believe there are twice that number of houſes, and thoſe too very mean, and the people poor. Their houſes, ſtreets, and walls, are all built of timber, but their monaſteries are very grand. Here is a citadel built of ſtone, but it is not a regular fortification. Novogorod Velike is the metropolis of a very large province of the ſame name. There are at preſent very many villages in Ruſſia, much larger than Novogorod, and much better built. It may juſtly now be called the city of prieſts. It is a biſhop's ſee. The metropolitan and others of the clergy, are ſaid to enjoy very large revenues in land, if the preſent Empreſs has not ſeized upon part of them, which would undoubtedly be good œconomy, as theſe wretches are the very worſt of tyrants over their fellow creatures.

The province of Novogorod is bounded by Ingermanland or Ingria on the north, Pſkopſkoi province on the weſt, the province of Moſcow on the ſouth, and Bicloozerſke province

vince on the eaſt. This province is betwixt 56 and 61 degrees north latitude, and betwixt 47 and 56 eaſt longitude. The metropolis lies in 58 degrees 25 minutes north latitude, almoſt ſouth-eaſt from St Peterſburgh. The lake Ilmen is diſtant from the city ſouth by weſt 11 verſts, and is ſaid to be 18 Poliſh miles long from eaſt to weſt, and 12 broad from ſouth to north. This lake is well ſtored with variety of fine fiſh.

As very little happened worth the reader's attention on my paſſage from Novogorod to Moſcow, I ſhall ſet down the names of the cities, eams, and their diſtances one from the other, all the way to Moſcow, and after that make ſome general remarks concerning the country, cities, and villages through which I paſſed.

Imprimis, To Brunets verſts 25, to Zuilzoff 30, to Kreſlitza 33, to Eaſhiſbitza 40, to Zymygotze 23, to Earova 22, to Chotelova 38, to Veſhnevolotehock 37, to Vidropſkei-eam 33, to Torzchoak 37, to Medna 33, to Tweer 37, to Gorodyn 30, to Gavidova 30, to Kleen 27, to Binka 30, to Tchurno 25, to Moſcow 28.

Theſe are the names of only the cities or villages where I took refreſhment, but there are more villages on the road which I paſſed through. I added the number of verſts, and found them juſt 725, tho' I'm told, by a late admeaſurement they amount to 784. No

perſon

perſon poſſeſſed of the above route can be impoſed on by the eamſhicks, which they are more ready to do to ſtrangers betwixt St Peterſburgh and Moſcow, than any where elſe in Ruſſia.

CHAP. XXIX.

A continuation of the former.

AFTER we had lodged one night in Novogorod, we had orders next morning to embark and proceed by water to Brunets. This ſcene exhibited a great deal of tenderneſs betwixt the ſailors and their wives, who had travelled from St Peterſburgh to Novogorod, to take their laſt farewell of their huſbands, whom they had but ſmall hopes of ever ſeeing again, not ſo much from fear of the war, as from the inclemency of the climes to which they were bound. The officers waited patiently for about an hour on the banks of the river, and ſeemed to ſympathize with them in their friendly embraces; but at laſt, finding that orders and entreaties could not force the huſbands from their wives, who clung to them, they ſent ſome ſubalterns amongſt them, who without ceremony not only parted the loving pairs, but uſed them ſo ill, as even ſhocked my humanity.

The

The bitter lamentations and fervent prayers of the women on ſhore, and the ſilent ſignals made to them by their huſbands from the barks, were truly tender and affecting. At laſt, all hands were employed in warping, puſhing with ſtings, and rowing againſt the ſtream, till we paſſed under the ſtone bridge up the river into the Ilmen lake, which was about the time of the morning prayers.

The Ruſſians are extremely devout, and, if poſſible, will not let any opportunity ſlip in putting up their prayers to heaven, eſpecially when they are to make very long and dangerous voyages or travels: They therefore ordered the barks to bring to at a monaſtery on the north ſide of the lake. I went into the church with them, where they uſed very many proſtrations and croſſings, whilſt the prieſts were imploring heaven for their ſafety and ſucceſs.

After prayers were ended, we, having a fair wind, croſſed the lake, and arrived at Brunets, where we were ſoon furniſhed with horſes, and ſet out about dinner-time, being the fourth day from St Peterſburgh, and took up our night's lodging in Zuilzoff, after having travelled through a very plentiful fine country. Next morning, according to my cuſtom, I departed long before the command, and ſo paſſed through all the villages formerly mentioned, till we arrived in Tweer, without meeting with any accident.

This

This country, though more open than betwixt Novogorod and St Peterſburgh, is very full of woods. Hence, as I was told, a Ruſſian peaſant had begged leave of Peter the Great, to cut a ſmall canal, in order to join a branch of the rivers Volga and Mſta, which runs into the lake Ilmen; and, in order to defray his expences, he procured a royal edict, to impoſe upon paſſengers a ſmall toll at a bridge laid over this canal, and another toll for opening the draw-bridge to let barks paſs and repaſs from the one river to the other. That great Emperor not only granted the boor's requeſt, but nobilitated him, and made the tolls or impoſts perpetual to him and his heirs or ſucceſſors, providing the canal and bridge were kept in good repair, and reſerved only free paſſage for his own armies and fleet.

The peaſant performed with great judgment what he had propoſed, and his ſucceſſors live in opulence from the annualrents they get; for by this canal a paſſage is opened from St Peterſburgh to Aſtrachan for ſmall barks, and this has not only increaſed trade, but rendered the immenſe woods, in that diſtant country, uſeful even in St Peterſburgh and Moſcow.

Valdoi is a very pleaſant large village, and has a beautiful lake in full view of it. At two miles diſtance, almoſt in the middle of the lake, there is an iſland and monaſtery. The iſland is well covered with trees, and makes a

fine

fine prospect from the village. When a traveller enters this village, no matter whether Russ or foreigner, he is immediately surrounded with many girls, wanting to sell wheat-bread baked in a particular form, like to plaited ropes, which they call kringlkes. These girls seem to be a different people from the Russians. I was told they came from the borders of Poland. They are very pretty, and remarkably well coloured. They are also extremely kind and obliging to strangers, and will, I doubt not, for a small consideration, grant them the last favour.

CHAP. XXX.

A continuation of the same discourse.

EARLY in the morning we arrived in Tweer, crossing the great river Volga on a floating timber bridge. Tweer is a very large city, mostly built with timber, the streets are made of the same materials, so that when a fire happens in any part, it generally proves dreadful. The greatest part of the city is on the south-east side of the river. A citadel, surrounded with earthen ramparts and wooden walls, is on the north-west of the Volga. Tweer is now formed into a dutchy, and the territories subject to its jurisdiction are taken from the provinces of Moscow and Novogorod.

rod. It is a city of great commerce, ſends the produce of Ruſſia all the way to Aſtrachan, and many other countries, by water, in flat, but very broad and long barks; and, in lieu thereof, it receives goods from India, Siberia, Perſia and Georgia. Of what extent their trade may be, I cannot ſay, but it is, no doubt, very conſiderable.

On the ninth day from St Peterſburgh, we ſet out in the morning, and dined at Gorodin. I told Mr Rannie, that in the night-time I had a pair of new ſhoes and my buckles ſtolen from my waggon, notwithſtanding I ſlept in it. He ſaid that poſſibly this was the ſame thief who had attempted to ſteal his beſt coat and veſt. After I was gone away, Mr Rannie roſe and followed the thief, and with a hanger almoſt killed him; at the ſame time they were both ſeized and carried to the commander, who ſent the thief to the governor, who alſo demanded Rannie, but the commander would not only not ſend him, but alſo refuſed to put him under arreſt. The ſtealing of my ſhoes and buckles furniſhed Rannie with a fine plea; and this trifling affair employed the pens of the writers in repreſenting it both to the admiralty, and the governor of Tweer.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXI.

A Continuation of the same, and our Arrival in Moscow.

FROM Gorodin we marched on to Moscow, where we arrived the twelfth day from St Petersburgh. The country betwixt Tweer and Moscow is not so full of woods, but still there are very many, and though the soil is light, yet it produceth plentifully for man and beast; but the inhabitants are much given to pilfering, drinking, and many other vices. I cannot help observing here the magnificent prospect this metropolis (situated in 55 degrees 10 minutes north latitude, 55 degrees 30 minutes east longitude, distant from St Petersburgh 730, some call it 734 versts,) made, at the distance of six or seven versts, for the many thousand turrets, mostly covered with gilt copper, are wonderfully grand and beautiful; but at our arrival, I was not a little surprized to find, that, except a few palaces and churches, the greatest part of this superb city was built with timber. I was scarcely housed, when I was greatly frightened with a dispute betwixt one of my eamshicks and my old soldier. It seems the eamshick, asking more money than his fare, words rose high, and he reached a sud-

den ſtroke with a great ſtick, which laid old Firelock flat on the ground.

I was at no great diſtance, and, being then young and thoughtleſs, drew my ſword, and, had not the fellow retreated, I ſhould certainly have wounded, if not killed him; but he and his comerade run to the other end of the court. By this time my old ſoldier had recovered his feet, and, tho' blooding copiouſly, ſeemed to take little notice of it, but I was very much miſtaken; for he, with great deliberation, walked up towards the man that had ſtruck him, who, fearing what was to happen, ſcrambled to the top of the ſhade. His neighbour, not thinking he would hurt him, though the villain had attempted to beat the ſoldier, ſtood ſtill, but, at one blow with the great braſs hilt of his broad ſword, old Firelock brought him to the ground: However, I interpoſed, and hindered him from being further hurt. At the very inſtant in which my ſoldier had knocked down the one, the other ſlipping his feet, fell from the ſhade. He was nothing the worſe of the fall, as he fell on his feet; but, though lucky in this reſpect, the ſoldier gave him two blows on the head, both which reached the ſkull. I got him at laſt confined, ſtopped the blood, and dreſſed the wounds; but the varlets, in place of returning me thanks, went off with their horſes, threatening to have me and my ſoldier taken under arreſt; however, I heard no more of them.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXII.

Short Obſervations on Moſcow, its Bells, &c.

MOSCOW is truly a pleaſant, large, populous city, and, being almoſt circular, is ſaid to be ſeven verſts in diameter. Having but little time to ſpare, I at preſent ſaw but few curioſities; however, I went to ſee the great bell, which was then in a large pit. A fire had, about two months before this, burnt down near two thirds of this great city, and the belfry, being all of timber, ſhared the ſame fate; the bell fell into the bottom of the pit, and had a piece broken out of its edge, large enough to permit any man to go into it. Its weight is ſaid to be 443,772 lib. Its height is about 21 feet $4\frac{1}{2}$ inches, its diameter I could not tell, but it ſeemed to be very well proportioned. It was impoſſible to find out its diameter by meaſure, as its broadeſt lips were ſunk conſiderably into the earth, ſo that they could not be meaſured. Mr Hanway ſays, its weight is 12,327 poods, =443,772 lib. Engliſh; its height 21 feet $4\frac{1}{2}$ inches, its value L. 65,681 Sterling, its diameter at the top 7 feet $4\frac{3}{4}$ inches, and at the baſe, he ſays, it meaſures 22 feet $4\frac{3}{4}$ inches.

I then

I then went to the top of a very high tower, called Ivan Velike, or the Great John, I ſuppoſe after the tyrant Ivan Vaſilytch. From this tower I had a complete view of the whole city, which indeed made a very grand appearance. The weather being very cold, the Ruſſians heat their ſtoves before day-light, and make uſe of fire at no time of the day, except to get dinner ready, ſo that the view is never, but at thoſe times, obſtructed by ſmoke.

Upon the top of this tower there are three bells, I think the leaſt of which is larger than the largeſt in London. Under the tower is the antient Imperial palace, a large Gothick ſtone building. All theſe I have mentioned, and all the imperial antient archives, and different courts of juſtice, are in that part of the city called the Crimline, which is ſurrounded with a high brick wall, ſaid to be about 2090 paces in circumference. I ſhall ſay little more about this city at preſent, but ſhall make further mention of it at my return to it, when I ſtaid four months in it.

I went after this and viſited Mr Tarner, and delivered him a commiſſion from my friend Mr Bell of Antermony. He detained me to ſupper, and ſent me home in his coach. On my way home, I was ſtopped a ſhort time by a party of dragoons, who patrol through the city in the night-time, notwithſtanding there are many thouſand citizens who keep watch

watch, like our watchmen of London, to prevent robberies, thefts, and incendiaries. After a ſhort examination, the dragoons looked into the coach with a lanthorn, and let me paſs.

CHAP. XXXIII.

The Author leaves Moſcow.

IT was now the 20th of September, and the froſt was ſetting in very faſt. At Peterſburgh I bought a very long good morning gown lined with fur; and I hoped, that, as I was travelling towards the ſouth, I ſhould ſtand in need of no other covering to keep me from the cold, but in this I was much miſtaken, and indeed for ſome mornings paſt I had been obliged to get out of my waggon, and run on foot to keep myſelf warm. I was adviſed therefore, by my ſoldier and landlord, to buy an wolf's ſkin fur, and lucky it was for me that I followed their advice; for without it, a large furred cap, and the beſt boots, I could not have ſtood out the journey, as the cold was ſo intenſe and ſevere.

Next morning, ſo ſoon as the ports were open, I left Moſcow, and proceeded in my route to Taverhoff, through the following cities and villages, with the numbers of verſts annexed to them, paying at the ſame rate as I had

had done from Novogorod to Moſcow *per* horſe. The 300 ſailors I never ſaw after this day, and was now obliged to travel only with my old ſoldier. Thus equipped and furniſhed with proviſions, I took the following route: Polonna Gorra 5 verſts from Moſcow, to Pachra 29, to Molodie 20, to Laperna 16, to Serpuchoff 25, to Lyriti 10, to Veolmen 25, to Vaſham 15, to Tula Eam 30, to Dediloff 10, to Bocharoditza 25, to Kirſofske 12, to Mekilſchoka 10, to Kruſhova, all deſart, 30, to Echvim 15, to Polne, all deſart, 45; to Elitſka Eam 25, to Tſvala 22, to Kaſſia 17, to Sellochlilnie Eam 25, to Konhalodes 8, to Voronits, all deſart, 12, to Taverhoff 10 verſts. In all, from Moſcow to Taverhoff, 437 verſts.

Though I ſet out from Moſcow early on the 21ſt, yet I could proceed no further than Polonna Gorra, on account of my ſoldier having drunk too freely with our landlord at Moſcow, ſo that I only marched to Pachra late in the evening; after that I continued to travel through the above-mentioned villages, without meeting with any thing remarkable, till I arrived at Tula, (on the 23d) ſituated 54 degrees 10 minutes north latitude, and 55 eaſt longitude. Here I was detained very agreeably five days, by a general having taken all the horſes from this Eam the day before I arrived.

Tula

Tula is a very large village, and in it are many forges for making ſmall arms for the uſe of the army, and a foundery for caſting hand-granades and larger ſhells. A few officers and artillery-ſoldiers ſuperintend this work. They told me that the number of workmen conſiſted of about 2000, and many maſters; that it formerly belonged to Mr Dimidcoff, a rich Siberian merchant, who was the firſt that wrought the great iron-mines of Siberia; and that in Siberia he had at leaſt 100,000 men at work. Peter the Great gave him great privileges, and, among others, a liberty to engage, for the working in theſe mines, all vagrants and villains, who were afraid of being impreſſed into the army, or of puniſhment due for their crimes; beſides, many thouſand criminals who did not deſerve death, were ſent there to work for a fixed time, or during their lives, at a very ſmall wage.

But I was again told, that the Empreſs Eliſabeth had nobilitated the grand-children of the old Dimidcoff, redeemed the grant of Peter the Great, and put the iron mines into the poſſeſſion of the crown; but I have a ſtrong ſuſpicion this will not ſucceed, for certain reaſons, which I may afterwards have occaſion to mention.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXIV.

The Author's journey from Tula to Taverhoff.

HAVING ſtaid at Tula five days, and been moſt agreeably entertained by the artillery officers, I left it on the 28th of September about one o'clock *P. M.* I had not travelled four verſts till I began to experience to what diſtreſſes travellers are ſubject, and muſt ſubmit. A north eaſt wind blew violently, accompanied with a very ſmart froſt: The road here was deep, from the rain that had fallen, and from the marching of ſome ſoldiers to one of the armies acting againſt the Turks; but notwithſtanding the froſt, it was not hard enough in many places to bear up our machines. The puddle, however, froze to the wheels, and we were frequently obliged to halt and cut it, to make them turn round; add to this, the ſnow drove ſo furiouſly in our faces, that we loſt our way, nor could we ſee twice the length of a horſe before us. Thus fatigued, bewildered, and afraid of being frozen to death, we were ready to deſpair, when, in an inſtant, we heard the barking of dogs at no great diſtance: This diſpelled our fears, revived our ſpirits, and following the ſound, we

we ſoon arrived at a ſmall village, called Dediloff, belonging to an officer in the guards.

We proceeded to a great gate, as the cuſtom is, and deſired admittance for the night. Two ſervants, armed with halberds, told us in a ſurly manner, that we ſhould have no harbour there, and threatned our lives if we attempted to force our way. Old Steven, for that was my ſoldier's name, recommended himſelf to St Nicolas, ſcrewed his bayonet on his muſket, and ſwore that the firſt man who durſt to advance, ſhould inſtantly be ſent to the devil. He then, by the aſſiſtance of our eamſhicks, got on the top of the gate, and made as if he intended to fire into the court; upon which, the party thought proper to retreat into the houſe. The ſoldier opened the gate, and let us all in. He next deſired me to put on my ſword, and ſcrew the bayonet on my fowling-piece, for he ſaid, there was no truſting to theſe wretches, which I believe might be true. I did as he adviſed, and in this manner we entered the houſe. When we came to the door, Steven again let them know, that if the leaſt violence was but offered to any of us, none of their lives would be ſpared; that, as we had the honour to ſerve the Empreſs, we were determined rather to die like men, than to be frozen to death.

But how much was I ſurpriſed, when we entered into a large room, to ſee a very pret-

ty lady ſurrounded by many maidens! I made her all the compliments I could, and ordered Steven to aſſure her we were in the ſervice, and that I would anſwer for the behaviour of my people, providing her's were quiet; and that I always ſlept in my travelling waggon, and only deſired, that he and the drivers might be allowed to ſleep in ſome warm room; to which ſhe agreed: She appeared however ſomewhat ſullen, and while we were taking ſide-views of one another, an old man, with a long white beard, entered the room, and, after having enquired into the cauſe of the diſturbance, told me, that he was very ſorry that it had ſo happened, but added that the authors ſhould be puniſhed. He ſaid, that young lady was his ſon's wife, and that her huſband was in the army; that he himſelf had long ſerved Peter the Great, and conſequently wiſhed well to the army; that the village was his, and but a little way from our right road; he preſſed me to go to his houſe to partake of a ſupper, to which I had not the ſmalleſt objection.

Indeed, this old gentleman regaled me in a princely manner: He ſaid, it would be impoſſible for me to proceed in my travelling waggon if the froſt continued; and therefore ordered a great ſledge to be fitted up to receive my waggon with its wheels; which was ſo expeditiouſly done, that when I took my leave of him to go to bed in my waggon,

every

every thing was fixed; and, with much difficulty, I was allowed to give his men a ruble for their trouble.

A travelling waggon is a moſt convenient vehicle, made like to an oblong coach, with a coach-box for the driver to ſit on, in which are placed a ſmall bed and pillows: It is covered with leather, and lined with baize. I therefore rather choſe to ſleep in my waggon, than in a room full of people and nauſeous ſmells, and indeed, with the help of good furs, and a wax candle, burning half an hour after it was buckled up, I ſtood out the greateſt froſts very comfortably. This old gentleman was a moſt agreeable landlord, his company ſuch as I loved much: He gave me a ſhort hiſtory of the life and actions of Peter the Great, of which he was very capable, as he belonged to the guards, and many times had fought under his immediate orders, and near his perſon; and indeed he was ſo wonderfully agreeable and entertaining that had not Lethe overcome Steven my interpreter, I believe neither of us would have thought of ſleep till early in the morning: But we parted at midnight, and I never ſaw my friendly hoſt again, for next morning, before I awakened from ſleep, we were ſome miles diſtant from this village.

After this, we paſſed on till we arrived at a ſingle houſe, near a village called Echvim, ſituated on this ſide of a deſart, 45 verſts

over

over, where nothing but ſky and ſnow was to be ſeen, without meeting any thing worth relating. The Iſba, or warm room was very large, but a number of maſons and other labourers had taken poſſeſſion of it in their way from Voronits, ſo that there was ſcarcely room for me to ſit down.

I expreſſed my fears to Steven, that they might ſteal ſomething from my waggon; and therefore, as we did not intend to ſtay long, propoſed that he and I ſhould interchangeably watch the waggon and baggage. But he was of another opinion, and adviſed me to charge my pipe with tobacco, and to put near the top ſome aſſa fœtida mixed with tobacco, for, ſaid he, "When you have lighted it, and they obſerve the aſſa fœtida begin to burn, then to blow from me, I will anſwer for the conſequence." The common people in Ruſſia are extremely religious and ignorant, and conſequently extremely ſuperſtitious. They believe that no perſon, or nation can have the leaſt chance of being ſaved, even by the merits of our Saviour, unleſs they profeſs the Greek religion: they imagine that they have leſs or more ſome correſpondence with the devil: and that thoſe who profeſs any branch of medicine, are his moſt intimate friends, hence, the following affair will not ſurpriſe the reader.

I did as the ſoldier had directed, thoſe next me perceiving the ſmell of ſomething more

more than tobacco, began to retire to the door, where Steven did not fail to raiſe their ſuſpicions and fears to the greateſt height, but when I had blown out the rich fumes of aſſa fœtida, they reached thoſe on the top of the ſtove firſt, who, coughing exceſſively, jumped down with the greateſt precipitation on their neighbours, frightened out of their wits, and, in the hurry to get out of the room, ſome were not a little bruiſed. Upon their retreat, Steven entered laughing, and told me that were we to remain all day and night, the landlord himſelf would not enter the houſe, that he was certain their prieſt would be ſent for to ſanctify the houſe by prayers, holy waters, and fumigations: He ſaid as it was Lent, if he had not got them out, he muſt have faſted that day, as he had nothing to eat but what I left, and this by the Ruſſians is eſteemed pagana, or unclean. This indeed, would have been ſevere treatment to Steven; for none loved their paunch or eaſe better than himſelf: Thus having dined plentifully, and fed our horſes, who had performed but a ſmall journey: We proceeded, at about the diſtance of a quarter verſt, and paſſed all the miſerable people, whom we had turned out, ſome ſitting on the ſnow, others running about, others playing at hand and foot to keep themſelves warm. We had not travelled four verſts further, when a young Coſſack came up with us,

at

at which time our eamſhicks were inſinuating that they were afraid they ſhould not find the road.

I enquired of this young man, he ſaid, he was not acquainted with the road, but believed we were very right, I promiſed him a trifle, if he would keep us company, to which he agreed. We had not travelled much further till the ſky, which was ſerene before, began to overcaſt, and was ſucceeded by a thick fall of ſnow. The young man at this ſeemed much diſmayed, and told me that many people had been loſt by ſuch accidents, who were well acquainted with the deſart at other times, in ſhort, we continued to travel on, in the heavy fall of ſnow, till the young man rode forward, and for ſome time diſappeared, but at laſt returned and aſſured us, that we were right, for that he had diſcovered a valley hard by, well known to him.

We proceeded to this valley, where he deſired us to feed our horſes. We did ſo, and then proceeded. We had hardly gone five verſts further, when the ſky turned clear, the wind abated, and in ſhort, the cold decreaſed ſo much, that it appeared to be thaw. The horſes were much fatigued, though we were ſtill about 10 verſts diſtant from our deſigned village.

Afraid of being obliged to take up my lodging in the deſart, I walked on foot, and obliged

obliged my ſoldier and the reſt to do the ſame, but at laſt, being conſtitutionally unable to bear much fatigue, I was obliged to betake myſelf to the waggon. We had not travelled far, when I obſerved the ſoldier ſitting behind my waggon, I upbraided him, and ordered him to get off; he did ſo, and, as I believed, imagined I could not proceed without him; for he laid himſelf down upon the ſnow, nor offered to ſtir, when we were at leaſt a verſt diſtant from him. I was told this by the eamſhicks, and indeed ſaw him myſelf, but afraid, Steven would become my maſter, had I yielded to his humour, I ordered the eamſhicks to drive on to the village, nor did I diſcover my thoughts about him to any perſon: I had it always in my power to have ſent in ſearch of him, but deemed it right to allow a reaſonable time for his arrival; and indeed, he did not deceive me, for he arrived before I expected him, and for his excuſe, he ſaid he was ſeized with a violent cholic, and could not ſo much as acquaint me with the reſt of his complaint.

I told him that I underſtood his diſeaſe, that I was determined not to be trifled with, and that he might provide himſelf with meat and drink for the future unleſs, he were to behave better in time coming; for though I could ſpeak but a little of the Ruſs, I would get him puniſhed for his obſtinacy. Upon this, he aſked pardon, and promiſed to act ſo no more:

Thus

Thus we were friends, and he behaved well till we arrived at Taverhoff.

The truth was, he was afraid that the wolves would have made a meal of him, and I was of the ſame opinion, and this made him repair ſo very expeditiouſly to the village. Having arrived ſafe at Polno 45 verſts from our laſt ſtage, I was as glad as a general could be of having gained a victory, for indeed, we ran a great riſque of loſing our road, of being frozen, or ſtarved, or of being devoured by wolves, who are ſometimes ſeen to the number of three or 400 together, and ſo furious are they, as I have been told, that they enter villages, and ſometimes devour men and beaſts.

From Polno, we met with nothing worth relating, till we arrived at Voronits, though we paſſed through another ſmall deſart betwixt Koukalodis and Voronits, being only 12 verſts. Having day light, we marched on 10 miles further to Taverhoff, ſituated in 52 degrees, 30 minutes north latitude, 57 degrees, ſix minutes eaſt longitude, where I arrived on the fourth of October: Thus in 26 days, I marched from St Peterſburgh to Taverhoff, diſtant from Moſcow 443 verſts, in moſt books, it is called Towrow very improperly: Let it therefore once for all be remembered, that I ſpell names according as the Ruſſians ſound them. If any ſtranger was to pronounce them as I have ſpelled them

them, every Ruſſian would readily underſtand what is meant, but if they were to enquire of a Ruſſian according to the pronunciation of former writers, I can engage that none but ſuch as are uſed to foreign pronunciations, could underſtand what was meant: My knowledge of the Ruſſian language makes me quite certain of this point.

Captain Carrabine, a Ruſſian, who had been in England, and ſpoke the language well, was commander of the port. He ſaid, that notwithſtanding my delays at Moſcow and other places, I had made a very expeditious journey, conſidering how heavy the carriages were to the ſmall number of horſes. Though from the map, it would appear that Veronits is not far from Moſcow, yet the neceſſity to get proviſion and horſes, oblige travellers to take a very crooked and round-about road.

Taverhoff it will appear is very near due ſouth from Moſcow: I was told, (for as all the country was covered with ſnow, I could be no judge of it) that the country is very rich in proviſion for men and beaſts. I believe this to be very true; for I experienced no want, and at ſuch a ſmall price, that it would ſeem incredible to people who never had been out of Britain.

As my ſtay in Taverhoff was very ſhort, I ſhall ſay no more of it nor of Veronits till my return. At my arrival, Captain Carrabine

behaved moſt diſcreetly. He had me frequently to dinner or ſupper, and ſeemed as if he could not want me: He ſaid my new commander Prince Golitzin was an exceeding good man, that he at preſent was in Kotchatoff on the river Don, not far from the city Teherkaſkoi, which is ſituated within 20 verſts of Aſoph, well fortified with many cannon, and where the Hetman or Prince of the Coſſacks reſides, that he may have the earlieſt notice of any depredations from the neighbouring Tartars: He ſaid, that as Mr Burman, the only ſurgeon they had to attend the officers, marines, and ſailors belonging to the port, as alſo the hoſpital, was ſick, and eſpecially as he well knew the Prince, in about a month or ſix weeks, would return with his command; he, for theſe reaſons, thought it needleſs to ſend me to Kotchatoff, where I would be very uncertain of finding him, ſince he, Carrabine, was certain, ſo ſoon as he ſhould receive orders from the admiralty, he would loſe no time in coming to Taverhoff.

Thus I paſſed my time in attending the ſick in the hoſpital and garriſon, till the beginning of December. About this time, one evening having ſupped at Carrabine's, he told me, that Mr Burman was out of ſome medicines; therefore, ſaid he, I doubt not you'll readily gave him from your's what may be at preſent needful; that he was certain the Prince would take it in good part, and thank

me

me for doing ſo. I anſwered him, that my inſtructions from the Medicine chancery ordered, that, by my oath to the government, I ſhould carefully carry theſe medicines for the uſe of the men under the orders of Prince Golitzin my commander, and there break open the ſeal, and require a centinel, as the cuſtom of Ruſſia is, to be appointed, with his drawn ſword, to guard theſe medicines, leſt any might make free with them without my knowledge; and that I ſhould not dare to give any part of them to any perſon, except ſuch as were immediately under the Prince's command, as I ſhould anſwer at my peril to God and the Empreſs.

I ſaid, theſe were my orders, and that, tho' I was extremely ſenſible of the eaſy and elegant civilities he had ſhewn me, I was yet determined to act conformably to my inſtructions. I at the ſame time aſſured him, that I would not only give him and his lady proofs of my gratitude and reſpect, but was alſo willing to do every thing in my power for the recovery of the meaneſt of his ſervants. He anſwered, that he knew I had ſuch inſtructions; that every one entruſted with her Majeſty's medicines had the ſame; that, however, it was looked upon as a mere form, and that the Medicine chancery well knew, that their ſurgeons not only lent their medicines, but cured with them her Majeſty's officers, their wives, children, and ſervants. I anſwered, that

what-

whatever others might do, I was determined, though at the peril of my life, not only to keep my oaths, but alſo my promiſes inviolable, both to her Majeſty, and to all men. Upon this the captain began to ſhow many airs, fit only, as I told him, to frighten children; and, amongſt other things, he told me, that he would take Stephen from me. This, I aſſured him, was only in the power of the ſupreme court of admiralty, or of my immediate commander Prince Golitzin, and that, if he did ſo, I would immediately diſcontinue all duty, and have it decided by a court martial; and thus I left him. Next morning, as I was on duty in the hoſpital, a writer put into my hand a paſſport, telling me at the ſame time, that I muſt ſet out that very day. I commanded him out of the hoſpital, and conſulted with Mr Burman what was to be done. He, well knowing how unfit he was, by reaſon of his diſeaſe, to attend the ſick, and how uncertain his time of life might be, by a petition to the Cantoir, required that I might be detained in Taverhoff. So brutal was the vain Carrabine, that he gave no ear to this, but go I muſt. I acknowledge I had no liking to this journey in the winter ſeaſon, though it would have been moſt agreeable in the ſummer, as my route lay thro' the pleaſanteſt country of the Ukraine, on the beautiful banks of the Don, the ancient Tanais: However, I, in hopes the Prince might

arrive

arrive every day, postponed it as long as I could; and indeed it was six days after I had got my pass, before I thought to go in earnest. The incensed Carrabine imagined I was gone, as I had not appeared in public; but that day, I walked by his house on purpose: He no sooner saw me, than he expressed his surprize how I durst loiter away my time. I told him, that I neither had received money for my journey, nor were any horses to be found in Taverhoff.

This was indeed, as intended, to him a reproof, but in a short time I had both, and, recommending myself to the guidance of heaven, instantly set out, on the 10th of December, accompanied with my old fellow-traveller, Stephen, and took the following route, for which I paid *per* verst as formerly.

To Usman versts 15, to Skorits 60, to Skestacoff 35, to Paulofsky 37, to Kashkin 20, to Mamonill 22, to Brutchock 22, to Matushka Loch 22, to Kazanka 22, to Mosshack 38, to Molan 22, to Bushkonaften 23, to Uskadvid 21, to Uskaper 12, to Astratskaja 27, to Wisemadits 12, to Kaspopin 20, to Klidska 17, to Perikapska 50, to Grigoryofska 24, to Serotine 10, to Belaske 32, to Golobinske 45, to Petisbe 35, to Chirie 33, to Kizni Chirie 10, to Kakeiglikina 19, to Isauloff 19, to Zimalikie 7, to Kiriman 17, to Nagaskin 17, to Kurman 13, to Ugham 13, to Kostikin 13, to Ternosskoi 9, to Romanofskoi

24,

24, to Kirgala 8, to Kamuſhink 6, to Buſtriaſke 10, to Karagla 3, to Michaelkom 14, to Niſni Michaelkom 3, to Kagalak 18, to Vedernik 7, to Babbe 4, to Zoloto 10, to Kotehatova 10. Thus I arrived at Kotehatova, on the 23d of December, by the route Mr Carrabine pointed out, being in all above 930 verſts. This long journey I accompliſhed in thirteen days and nights, for when the villages were not far diſtant, I had freſh horſes at every village, whereas in Ruſſia one can have them only at Eams, but the Coſſacks bear all burdens equally.

I ſhall now take notice of a few incidents which befel me on the road. Firſt, I left Taverhoff in no good humour, by which means I had forgot to lay in a good ſtore of freſh meat. Bread I had enough: Betwixt Uſman and Skorits I met with nothing to buy; but near Skorits, as Stephen was upon the ramble, we eſpied at a poſt-houſe, a ſoldier and poſt-boy bringing betwixt them a very large pike on a pole; and, aſking the value, they required three copeaks, which was very readily agreed to.

This good fortune was very agreeable, and would have been ſo, had they aſked three ſhillings. We were told, that at Paulofſky, the Empreſs had another grand fabrick for all ſorts of ſmall arms. At this place we provided ourſelves with proviſions, and, without loſs of time, ſet out, meeting with nothing remarkable,

remarkable, till near to Moſhack, Stephen aſſured me that a kind of heath fowl, who had perched upon trees at no great diſtance, were deaf, and excellent food, and that if I could get near enough, without being perceived, I might kill ſome. Accordingly I got behind a large tree, at no great diſtance from them, and killed three, which, when falling, I obſerved the reſt to look at; but at laſt, whether they perceived me or not, they flew away; however, theſe three were excellent food. The Ruſſians call theſe fowls gluchoi teterks, or deaf, to diſtinguiſh them from another kind which hear well, and never perch on trees. At Molan I obſerved the ſtreets were narrow, and I deſired the magiſtrates, who are the moſt hoſpitable people in the world, that I might get a ſafe place to put my ſledges in, for fear of thieves. At this they laughed heartily, and aſſured me I was now in the Ukraine amongſt the Dons Coſſacks.

In Ruſſia, they ſaid, there were thieves; but it was ſcarcely ever heard that any thing was ſtolen by the Coſſacks, for that thieves among them were inſtantly puniſhed with death.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXV.

A Continuation of the ſame, and ſome Account of the Coſſack Government.

I Begged they would give me ſome ſhort information about their government, and they complied with my deſire in the following manner: They, ſaid they, were ſo far ſubject to the laws of Ruſſia, as to oblige themſelves to aſſiſt the Imperial army with a certain number of troops, when required: That they, being borderers with the Crim Tartars and Turks, were natural ſoldiers: That therefore they were under the protection of the Empreſs, but had their own Prince called Hetman Velike: That the Hetman was ordinarily appointed by the Empreſs, choſen from amongſt them: That they made laws for themſelves, providing they were not repugnant to, nor claſhed with thoſe of the Empire: That every citizen thro' the whole Ukraine, above 21 years of age, had a vote in every thing done; and conſequently could not be ignorant of the laws which they aſſented to. They ſaid, that when the army reſided amongſt them, it was not at all times agreeable, if not commanded by judicious men; that the only redreſs they had, was to complain to their Hetman, who repreſented their complaints to St Peterſburgh; and that moſt commonly

commonly they got redreſs. I indeed found afterwards, that the army was afraid of complaints from them. They told me of a theft of cattle which had been committed in a certain village by ſome Kalmucks, who immediately fled to the deſart: That, without delay, the villagers gave their next neighbours notice, and theſe to others, *&c. &c.* ſo that in little more than 24 hours the whole Ukraine was in motion, and every village, or little city, ſent out a party of horſemen to ſcour the deſarts. In ſhort the thieves were taken, with the horſes they had ſtolen, and immediately conducted to the village where the theft was committed. The magiſtrates of that village conveened the inhabitants, who encircled the town-clerk, prieſt and thieves in the market-place, under the canopy of heaven, and, after they had all heard what was alledged againſt them, and the defences of the thieves, the magiſtrates ordered the ſame to be read by the writer, and required the Coſſacks to determine, Whether guilty or not? which is done by putting on, or off their caps, and the majority carries it; (the Coſſacks never move their caps to one another.) It fell out that the Kalmucks were found guilty by a great majority. The prieſts then recommended to the thieves to make their peace with God, for they were inſtantly to be put to death. They were immediately carried in boats into the middle of the river Don, their arms pinioned,

and a parcel of ſand, tied up in a cloath, put about their necks to ſink them. Then, without further ceremony, they were thrown out of the boat. Their Lord offered to pay any thing reaſonable to ſave them, but the Coſſacks were inexorable; notwithſtanding, he threatened to complain to the Empreſs, which indeed he did, but to little effect; for he was ordered to allow none of his men to ſojourn in the Ukraine. They ſaid their magiſtrates continued in office only one year; and that a poor man, if ſenſible and upright, had the ſame chance to be preferred as a rich one. It ſeems riches have no great weight, and are in no great eſtimation there; and indeed I never ſaw a beggar among them.

They have great plenty of proviſions, and conſequently are under no temptation to ſteal. I am convinced, that I did not pay a ſixpence value for all the proviſion I had need of for me and my men, in travelling through their country; for, if I ſtayed any time, their magiſtrates, for the honour of their town, uſed to ſend me fowls and fiſh, and a bottle of ſpirits, which Stephen loved well; as alſo ſome ale or mead: And, when they underſtood my profeſſion, the ſick aſked my advice, for which they commonly ſent fowls of all kinds, which I have often refuſed, becauſe I could not diſpoſe of them. The Coſſacks are dreſſed in long *togæ* like the Ruſſians, and the women differ from the Ruſſian women only in this, that

that they wear on their heads a cap, with a front ſtanding up about a foot above their heads, in form of a creſcent, either embelliſhed with ducats of gold, pearl, or beads, or all three formed together, according to their different fancies.

Rich people may have better houſes than others, with a piece of ground incloſed for their uſe and conveniency, but the deſart is free to them all alike; conſequently a poor man, if he can purchaſe a cow and ewe, may have plenty before he turns old. They neither will make a preſent of, nor ſell any young creature, ſaying, that it is contrary to reaſon to think, for as great a love as the Supreme Being may have for man, that his deſign was, that man ſhould kill young creatures at pleaſure, as it ſeemed in ſome degree to be a contradiction to the very deſign of the creation; and that none but crazy fooliſh people, and ſuch as prefer pampering their bellies to every reaſonable thought, can think otherwiſe.

They are all Chriſtians of the Greek perſuaſion; but by the wars in Sweden, Poland, Turky, and Perſia, they are not near ſo ſuperſtitious as the common Ruſſians; and, altho' they have a great regard for their prieſts, they will yet puniſh them, when guilty of crimes, as well as other men. Every man who comes into their country to reſide among them, is made a denizon, and inſtantly has all the immunities and privileges of a

Coſſack.

Coſſack. They will give to ſtrangers all titles due to their rank in the world, but they think no title more honourable than to be called Coſſack, meaning by that their freedom and honour in war, and honeſty to every perſon, except enemies; nor can it be ſaid that they are generous enemies, for if they cannot take priſoners eaſily, they murder them without any heſitation, alledging that it is the fortune of war, and that their enemies do juſt the ſame to them; but I have converſed with ſome Swedes and their offspring, who ſeemed well enough ſatisfied with their fortune, nor had they the leaſt deſire to return into their own country.

CHAP. XXXVI.

A continuation of the ſame.

I continued to travel night and day through the above mentioned villages, which, after we paſſed Serotine, are all ſurrounded with a *foſſa* and rampart, having ordinarily two gates and ſome cannon, and indeed they have great reaſon to do ſo, as will be immediately ſeen. The Don abounds with many excellent fiſh, as ſturgeons, ſtirlets, &c. and there is great plenty of game on its banks, which are covered with almoſt continued foreſts. The beautiful large grey eagle loves this land of liber-

ty,

ty, and indeed, by his fearleſs freedom, made me think he was a real native. I wanted to try what execution a ball would make upon two of them walking at ſome diſtance, but the Coſſacks prevented me, ſaying, that they were not afraid of man, and that they ſometimes did miſchief: That they made very free with their geeſe and lambs, and were known to fly away with the ſmaller ſheep.

Belaſke is diſtant from Gobulinſke 45 verſts. Betwixt theſe towns there are two roads, one upon the banks of the Don, the other through the deſart. My Coſſacks told me of them, and ſaid the one through the deſart was every way better, and that the other by the Don was through woods, and ſometimes infeſted by the Kalmucks, very uneven, and the longeſt of the two: That the road through the deſart was free of all incumbrances whatſoever; and that, at about 25 verſts diſtance, there was a ſolitary mill, where we could refreſh our ourſelves and feed our horſes. It is eaſy to imagine that I reſolved to go by the deſart, eſpecially as it was in the night-time, which deprived me of amuſing myſelf with the varieties and beauties of the country.

We therefore proceeded with good horſes, arrived at the mill about ten o'clock at night, and no ſooner had we ſtopped, than five ſtately clever young men came out, made us heartily welcome, and deſired we would walk in, where there was a good fire, of which we

were

were very glad. They did not ſtop here, but offered us a glaſs of ſpirits, thereafter mead, and ale as much as we pleaſed, at which my truſty Stephen rejoiced, and took two or three powerful pulls, which would have ſoon ſtupified him, had I not ordered him to retire. A little after this, one of my Coſſacks came into the mill, and, unperceived by the millers, gave a ſign to ſpeak with me. I went to the door, pretending ſome neceſſary buſineſs; but was ſurpriſed to hear the Coſſack ſay, "Sir, take care of yourſelf and us, keep company with the millers no longer; ſome officers have lately been loſt here, nor could they hitherto ever be heard of." Upon this information, I deſired the Coſſack to keep himſelf and his comerades in good order, and that I would, without loſs of time, retire, as if I was to take a ſleep, deſiring him to ſend Stephen to me; for as yet, though I had learned many vocables, ſince I left St Peterſburgh, I could not keep up converſation, nor, in ſuch an intricate affair, was ſure but they, if villains, as I ſuſpected they were, might find out my deſign.

When Stephen came, I begged to know if I could have a warm place or room to retire to, to take two or three hours ſleep. They ſeemed extremely glad of this, told me that they had ſome zemlenkes*, and that I ſhould have

* A zemlenke is a room well lined with timber, and covered

have the beſt. Accordingly they ſhewed me where I was to go. I ordered my bed and arms to be taken out of the waggon before them, and carried to the zemlenke, deſiring Stephen to tell the millers, that a little ſleep ſerved me, and that none might diſturb me for two or three hours, admoniſhing them at ſame time, that, as we were ſtrangers, if we were unexpectedly diſturbed, they would have themſelves to blame if they were hurt, becauſe, after ſuch admonition, we would undoubtedly fire upon them.

Accordingly, I and old Stephen had one of theſe zemlenkes, and the Coſſacks another, the millers retiring into the mill. When the mill-doors were ſhut, the Coſſacks, with all expedition, yoked their horſes, my ſoldier and I put the things into the waggon, and inſtantly drove off. Our way lying very near the mill-door, the noiſe which the horſes and ſledges made alarmed the millers, who came altogether in great haſte to the mill-door, and, though their deſign was not known, yet we gueſſed at it. The ſoldiers and Coſſacks ordered them to remain where they were, if they valued their lives. They took our advice, and were in the right, for every one of us were ready to fire upon them. When we had got out of danger, the Coſſacks told me, that

vered with the ſame under ground. They are very warm, and not to be known but by a ſmall door, and an opening on the top for a window.

that two or three officers, convoyed in the ſame way I was, ſet out by this mill, and never were heard of more.

That the neighbouring Coſſacks had interrogated the millers, who denied their having ever had any knowledge about them: That an order, by the authority of the Court of St Peterſburgh from the Hetman, was that day received by the magiſtrates of Belaſke, commanding them to make ſtrict enquiry into the conduct of theſe millers; and laſtly, as the millers were not of that country, conſequently not well known, it was ſuſpected they were the murderers of theſe officers and their convoy. They ſaid, that next day they would be ſeized, and examined ſeparately; and that this was the reaſon, why they had taken ſuch care of themſelves and me. I never had an opportunity thereafter, to learn any thing further about them.

Thus I continued my journey, till I arrived at Romanoffkoi, where the Coſſacks, more ſcrupulous than their brethren, would not open the gate, though in the day-time, till they had carefully examined my paſſport. At this gate two cannon were charged, and a number of men in arms, with matches burning, ready to diſcharge the cannon. I was directed to go to the town-houſe where the Hetmans or magiſtrates waited for me (for every town in the Ukraine has a town-houſe, where all public buſineſs is tranſacted, which

is

is a good lodging for all travellers who have no right to regular quarters on the citizens. It is a large room, with ſeats and tables, and, in the ſevereſt froſts, always kept warm by the ipſauls, or town-officers.) When I arrived, they welcomed me, and produced bread and ſalt, which is uſual, as I ſaid before, for the honour of their town. They aſſured me, that yeſterday a body of at leaſt 6000 Turkiſh and Tartarian horſe had left their town, after a ſmart ſiege of 48 hours: That within the town there were not at preſent above 20 young men able to ſtand on the walls: That their townſmen, in company with other Coſſacks, to the number of about ſeven or 8000 were in the Cuban Tartary, making depredations among them; but that an enſign had arrived a few hours before me with ſome maials and 30 or 40,000 rubles for the troops in Aſoph, and that he was determined to ſtay there till he could proceed with ſafety. They adviſed me alſo to remain with them, ſaying, that the government would juſtify ſuch a reſolution in ſo dangerous times, and that they would think themſelves happy in having one of my profeſſion with medicines, inſtruments, &c. in caſe of another aſſault, which they were in no ſmall dread of. To which I anſwered, that it might appear very reaſonable to them, but I obſerved it in a very different view: That I had ſworn to evite no perſonal danger, when her Majeſty's ſervice demand-

ed my attendance: That they had juſt now ſeen the outlines of my orders, commanding me to travel day and night, till I had joined my commander: And finally, that, as it was agreeable to the regulations and common ſenſe, I would ſtay that night, but next morning, God willing, I would proceed: That if I ſhould happen to be unfortunate, no perſon would be to blame but thoſe who ſent me. Therefore I deſired that men and horſes might be ready by day-light to go with me, together with as many men as they ſhould think neceſſary for my ſafety. They anſwered, that, from what they had ſaid, I could eaſily ſee that they had no ſufficient guard to ſend againſt 6000 enemies, but that I ſhould have the ſame number of men and horſes granted me, which brought me to this place, and alſo a ſenſible reſolute man as a convoy, and adviſed me to keep a good look-out.

Thus having parted in friendſhip, I made my addreſſes to the enſign, to encourage him to go with me. He ſaid, that he had a valuable truſt, and only 20 recruits, who had never ſeen fire; therefore he could put but very little truſt in them, and was determined to report this ſituation to his ſuperiors in Aſoph, and patiently wait their orders. My hoſteſs, a young Swede, told me, that ſhe had mounted the walls almoſt the whole time the enemy was before them: That ſhe believed many had

had been killed, for that they made three or four desperate assaults, but could not master the rampart; and at each time the old men, who played the cannon, had galled them excessively; and that, from the walls, she had seen them dragging off their dead men with hooks, which they carry with them, in order to conceal the number of their dead; and that I could see many of their dead and wounded horses about the town. She said, there were but few of their folk hurt, because they never appeared unless the enemy was at a distance, or just at the walls, when they never failed to give them a well-marked salute; immediately thereafter they jumped down, and charged, whilst the young men with some women remained, lest they had entered the town. She said much more to the same purpose, with which I shall not trouble the reader.

We set out next morning early, with great secrecy, and all the precaution we could, our guide riding a short way before us. We passed Kirgola smoaking in some parts, as also Kamushink, and arrived at Bustriaske, a large village smoaking in many places, but not a house standing. We observed at a small distance some ruinous houses, where the inhabitants used to keep cattle. Thither we went, and having fed our horses, and taken some refreshment to ourselves, set out again. Having passed Kargala, with only one house standing,

ſtanding, in the door of which was a woman, who gave us her beſt wiſhes, and deſired us to take great care that we did not meet with the enemy in the deſart. The ſun was ſet, and we ſtill had 14 verſts to go; however, it was our fortune that the deſart was well covered with ſnow, and the froſt very ſevere.

We rode on at an ordinary trot for about ten verſts, when our guide returning, told us, that ſome men were upon the road; we conſulted, but for many good reaſons drove forward, having new-primed our arms. As we approached the place where they had been, I obſerved many ſmall lights flying up in the air to an immenſe height; upon enquiry, the Coſſacks told me, that theſe were ſignals to their comerades, to let them know that we were on the road, and preſently we obſerved at a ſmall diſtance ſix men, three on each ſide of the road. I thought that they were within gunſhot, but the Coſſacks adviſed us not to fire at them, for fear of alarming their companions; whereupon, we drove as faſt as the horſes were able to gallop. We at laſt arrived on the top of a high mountain, leſs than half a mile from Michaelkom, in all ſafety.

The people in that town having been alarmed, only kept us at the port for ſome time, till they were aſſured we were friends, and the next day we reached Kotchatoff, on the 23d of December.

After

After deducting the time I spent at Tula and Taverhoff, I was only 34 days in travelling from St Petersburgh to Kotchatoff, which amounts to 2103 verſts, although heavy loaded, which was upwards of 64 verſts *per* day. I can give no right deſcription of this country, as it was all covered over with ſnow; but was told, that it was very fruitful, and certainly, in time of peace, it is an agreeable country. It is diſtant about 30 Engliſh miles north from Aſoph. Kotchatoff is in 47 degrees 8 minutes north latitude, and in 60 degrees eaſt longitude, diſtant from Taverhoff, by the road on the Don, 930 verſts. It is but a ſmall village. The Prince had three barks, with ſome cannon, ammunition, and materials for cutting of wood to build veſſels for navigating the Palus Mœotis againſt the Turks; but of this I ſhall ſay more hereafter. Upon viſiting the places on the Don, none was found ſo proper as the Icorits; wherefore, we only remained after my arrival in Kotchatoff till the 5th of January 1738.

However, before I proceed, in my return, I muſt again acquaint the reader, that about that time, or very ſoon after our departure, the Coſſacks, who had been employed in Cuban, returned, after having deſtroyed that open country, and carried off much plunder, many priſoners, flocks, and cattle. It ſeems the Turkiſh Tartars hovered about, and I be-

lieve

lieve were the ſame who put us in a fright, when on our return. The Coſſacks, as I ſaid, returning fluſhed with victory, and loaded with plunder, (no doubt had notice with what barbarity the Tartars had acted upon the Don) met them in the woods not far from the ruins of the burnt villages. They took their meaſures ſo well, and hemmed them in ſo effectually, that they cut 4000 of them in pieces, and recovered all their own cattle, and living Coſſacks, with all the other valuable things in their poſſeſſion,

The Coſſacks were ſo much enraged at the unheard of cruelty, that the Turks had exerciſed upon the Coſſack priſoners, that they would neither let the dead bodies be buried, nor throw them into the Don, but caſt them into two heaps, 2000 to each. The armies, fleet, and Coſſacks through the whole Ukraine paid dearly for this; for as the hot weather came on, the dead bodies putrified; and I was told by ſome officers, who paſſed by them, that they were obliged to make a circuit of about ſix miles diſtance, and yet the ſmell was moſt offenſive: In ſhort, the plague this ſummer 1738, raged moſt dreadfully, and if it did not take its riſe altogether, from theſe heaps of dead, certainly it was increaſed by them.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXVII.

Our return to Taverhoff by the river Don.

HAVING, as I ſaid, received orders from the admiralty to return to Taverhoff, we ſet out from Kotchatoff, (leaving a ſmall guard for the barks and implements of war, with orders to proceed for Aſoph with the firſt thaw) on the 5th January 1738, by another road much nearer than by the Don. As we were ſometimes obliged, notwithſtanding the ſeverity of the froſt, to take up our lodgings in woods, under the canopy of heaven alone; I ſhall only mention a few of the more remarkable towns on the banks of the Don and Oſkol, till we again arrived at Ribna upon the river Soina, almoſt where its ſtreams join the Don. All theſe rivers empty themſelves into the Don.

In ſo doing, I ſhall obſerve the ſame order I have hitherto done. From Kotchatoff to Kundrutze town on the Don, are 53 verſts, to Burſtra 16, to Kamennoi 86, to Gundroffke 45, to Lugan 84, to Kraſnaianſke 50, to Jamepol 61, to Rareoff, Boriſſof on the Oſkol 47, to Senkoff 56, to Aſnoſka 10, to Kamenka 47, to Valviki 36, to Obzunſke on the Soina 84, to Ribna 18, to Chovorotak on the Don 50, to Taverhoff 53.

By

By this road, we meaſured 776 verſts betwixt Kotchatoff and Taverhoff, ſo that it meaſures leſs than the road on the Don by 156 verſts.

It is proper, however, to obſerve that the Don and Oſkol rivers run through the very middle of Little Tartary; that though the towns are generally pretty well fortified, and have numerous inhabitants, yet the diſtances betwixt them are very great, quite uninhabited, and either deſart, or full of great woods; for which reaſons, it is much expoſed in time of war, to the depredations of flying parties of Crim Tartars, who commonly lie in wait upon the ſide of the woods, ready to fall upon paſſengers, when but few in number.

Our commander, Prince Gallitzin having every thing in readineſs, ſet out from Kotchatoff about four o'clock in the morning, with great ſecrecy; for the enemy never could learn what was the number of men he commanded: and as he cauſed fire a morning and an evening gun, as Vice Admiral and Cenator, they imagined his command muſt have been very conſiderable. He likewiſe took the precaution of keeping a very ſtrict guard about the town with great judgment.

He allowed none, whether ſoldiers, ſailors, or inhabitants, to go out of the town under pain of death. But in truth, it was quite the

the contrary, for it is ſaid, and he did not heſitate to ſay ſo alſo, that the Lords of the Admiralty planned out, and ſent him this route, on purpoſe that he might have been cut off.

His eldeſt brother, Prince Demitry, a Senator, one of the wiſeſt men at the helm of affairs, was, in the year 1736, for ſpeaking his mind too freely, ſhut up during the remaining part of his life in the caſtle of Sluſſelburgh, and all the Golitzin family were baniſhed, ſome of them degraded: To which the Empreſs Anne, the daughter of Ivan or John, chearfully acceded: For the Golitzins are blood relations of Peter the Great, and had it not been for them, and the Nanſhkins, the Princeſs Sophy would have murdered Peter.

Our commander had been for many years before, grand-treaſurer to the admiralty: It ſeems formerly, when the lords of the admiralty happened to be in want of money, they made free to borrow from the treaſurer: But, during the whole time of Prince Golitzin's management, they never could get a farthing; conſequently, they were glad to be rid of him. Theſe are ſaid to be the reaſons that they ordered him upon the Don, in ſuch perilous times, with a command not exceeding 200 officers and ſervants included: Add to this, that he was ordered from St Peterſburgh the ſame night, on which his brother was ar-

rested, nor could he have one day allowed him to put his affairs in order, and upon his leaving St Petersburgh, the admiralty was, during four months, closely employed in examining his books, to see if they could possibly find any fault, that they might get his life and estate. All these schemes failing, and people talking with great freedom of their barbarous usage of the Prince, and reports having been long received in St Petersburgh from the officers, and an engineer under the Prince's command, that no place was found more convenient to build small vessels than Icorits, distant about 70 versts from Taverhoff, nearer Azoph: Accordingly, he was at last ordered to return as I have said.

His enemies not doubting, and seeing all their schemes had proved abortive, but some blunder would happen to him in the confusion of a command of about 3000 soldiers and sailors, and 30,000 peasants.

We arrived at Kundritze town on the Don, about mid-day. It was here I had the first opportunity of seeing with what respect these people received Russian grandees, and truly, I must say, that it was next to adoration: I was informed however, that the Cossacks esteemed the Golitzin family preferable to any in the whole Empire, and were well acquainted with the cloud which hovered over it. It is something remakable that through

all

all Little Tartary, they paid as great respect to this good, old, noble general, as if he had had the power of life and death. They brought him many presents, but he frankly told them, that as he stood in need of no presents, he consequently would accept of none, but would not refuse some victuals; because he knew they would not permit him to buy, aud he could get them no other way, and indeed, his sledges were loaded with provisions, that he might stand in no need by the way. Not satisfied with having regaled the Prince and his officers plentifully, they did not forget his men; whereby, that very evening, I was involved in a good deal of trouble, attended with the most exquisite anxiety.

At our arrival, the Cossacks sent off some of their men armed, to give the next town notice of the Prince's arrival, and to warn them to have a sufficient number of fresh horses ready upon his arrival, that he might not be hindered in the least to proceed with all the expedition he pleased: Accordingly, having refreshed ourselves about two hours, we set out betwixt two and three of the clock *P. M.* and had scarcely reached a mile till we were alarmed with an irregular firing of cannon at the last town. Some of our convoy, (for they sent as many armed Cossacks, as they could spare, from one town to the next,

next, and this practice they continued thro' our route, till we arrived at Taverhoff) begged leave of the Prince, to return to defend their own town, not doubting that the Tartars had made an attack upon it.

The Prince very readily allowed as many to go as pleased, but the greater part staid with us. We had proceeded about two versts after this, mending our pace for fear of the Tartars, when our adjutant came to me, and told me that one of the medicine chests with the men belonging to it were not come forward, and that if it was lost, I would be charged with it. I not knowing at this time, the truth of his assertion, returned accordingly, my mate and Mr Bowman, whose chest it properly was, accompanied me, tho' I entreated him to stay by the command, alledging that it was quite needless for us both to run the risque of being either killed, or taken prisoners by these barbarians: But he was as much afraid of losing the medicines as I was, and indeed it was more his charge, as I had not received them from him. We had not drove back two versts, when a Cossack on horseback discovered the people we wanted, in a small valley, a little way from the right road. It seems, they had been making too free with their bottle, while in Kundrutze, and being quite stupid with liquor, they lost their road, and with all the tranquillity imaginable, had lain down on the

the ſnow and fell faſt aſleep, notwithſtanding the great froſt, and noiſe the cannon made hard by them.

Mr Bowman very ſoon brought them to their ſenſes with a ſevere whipping, and ordered them to drive on before us, as faſt as the horſes could gallop. We did not overtake the Prince till we arrived at Buiſtra: The Coſſacks who had returned to Kundrutze overtook us, and told that all was well in their town; that the magiſtrates having neglected to pay their compliments to the Prince with their cannon, at his arrival in their town, they thought it their duty to do ſuch a piece of neceſſary ceremony at his departure; and that this was the cauſe of our alarm. It was a cuſtom, and I believe a law, that when any flag or general officer approached any cities or towns of note, which had cannon mounted, to ſalute him with more or leſs cannon, according to his rank in the army or fleet; but I do not believe the Coſſacks were ſubjected to this, becauſe they bought all their own ammunition; whereas in Ruſſia, the powder and all other ammunition belongs to the Empreſs. I was informed that when the Prince received this information, that he ſent orders to all the towns through which he was to paſs, to keep their powder for the ſafety of their towns, acquainting them, that the ceremony was very diſagreeable to him, and not only unneceſſary and

expenſive

expenſive to them; but expoſed them in time of war to the danger of want of powder, when they might have much more occaſion for it: Eſpecially, as he was well informed that parties of the enemy were hovering about, who would be glad to find them unprepared. After this, nothing uncommon happened till we arrived at Gundroſske: Betwixt this laſt town and Lugan are computed 84 verſts; conſequently no horſes could carry us through, without reſt and food. About 30 verſts diſtant from Gundroſske is a ſmall village, where we halted to refreſh ourſelves and cattle in the day time. After we had given our horſes two or three hours feeding, we ſet out in the afternoon, but before we had travelled 20 verſts, night came on, and we were ſtill forced to proceed 20 verſts further, till we arrived in a very great wood, where we had fires made in many places, to get our food warmed, and alſo, as it was extreme hard froſt, to ſoften the air. The horſes which were yoked before the medicines, *&c.* were quite tired, ſo that I arrived later than any of our men.

At our arrival, my appetite was very keen, but I had nothing to eat, except a piece of very good roaſted beef frozen quite hard, my bread was in the ſame condition. Stephen, my only help-mate, and I, with no ſmall trouble thawed our victuals before the fire, then ſcraped off a little and eat it, as I

was

was very tired, I desired Stephen to bring my bed, and lay it down upon the snow, upon which, I stretched myself a short while, with my feet to the fire, and left Stephen to heat, scrape, and eat as much as he pleased.

The Prince, when obliged to take up his abode in the fields, trusted none of his officers, but was wont to go round his men, and see that the centinels were alert, and the rest in good order. As he was thus employed, he found me on my bed, and Stephen very busy eating. He asked if I was well? I instantly rose, but Stephen told him every thing which had happened; he took me by the hand, and desired me to go with him, I obeyed, we went together to another fire, where his officers were busy eating some exceeding good fish soup very warm. He ordered to give me a spoon, which I exercised well, and got also a few glasses of excellent wine. He spoke to me frequently: But I believe he could only guess at my answers; so much kindness I could observe, fretted not a little his adjutant, and indeed, as he used too great freedom with the Prince, I thought he said that probably I would not in time deserve so much kindness, at which I am certain the Prince was very angry. Having eat and drunk heartily, I paid my compliments to the Prince, and his officers, except the adjutant, of whom I have ever retained a bad opinion.

Before

Before day-light, the whole command was in motion. My people, having been very tired the night before, were not ſo ſoon ready as the others, which was lucky for the Prince. It ſeems the Coſſacks upon watch had given information, that, as they heard a noiſe among the trees, they ſuſpected the enemy had diſcovered us. This report ſoon ſpread, and he was beſt off who could get ſooneſt away. Our horſes, as I ſaid before, were heavy loaded, and probably not ſo good as the reſt; wherefore, we were obliged to march on ſlowly. We had not drove many verſts from the wood, when we obſerved a cheſt, which, though not large, I ſuſpected might contain the Prince's plate, on account of its weight. Day now began to appear.

We travelled on till we were within three or four verſts of Liegon, the country free of woods, and the ſun ſhining bright, when our heroic adjutant, Balotnicoff, (for that was his name,) appeared with a guard of four ſoldiers, and, with a loud voice, and a very haughty air, aſked If we had ſeen a cheſt? Stephen anſwered in the affirmative, and, pointing, told him, it was lying a-croſs my ſledge, and ſaid, that I would carry it to the Prince. Balotnicoff put on ſuch airs, that I reſolved to let him know that I was determined not to bear his impertinence: But he, miſtaking the gentle anſwers I gave him by my ſoldier, as if cauſed through fear of him, alighted from

his

his horſe, came forward with his ſoldiers to take the cheſt *per* force. Upon which, I took up a carrabine which lay by me, laid it on my knee, as if ready for any thing; and ordered my men to drive on. The gallant Balotnicoff and his ſoldiers mounted their horſes, and rode off, threatening me no doubt. In ſhort, we arrived but a little after him, when I was conducted with the cheſt to the Prince. A noiſe ſoon enſued. I deſired Stephen to inform the Prince, that I found the cheſt, and ſuſpected it was his ſilver plate: That, as I was a ſtranger, had I parted with it, and if any thing had been loſt, I might have moſt innocently ſuffered in character at leaſt: That what was in it I knew not, but was certain nothing was loſt ſince it was in my poſſeſſion. I ſaid, (for the adjutant had been complaining grievouſly, as if I had threatened to ſhoot him,) that it was very true I had laid my carrabine on my knee, the manner in which I frequently travelled, but did not threaten him, tho' I was uncertain what might have happened, had he offered force: That I was determined to be as obliging to all the officers, and all men, as lay in my power: That I never would deſignedly affront or diſoblige any of them; but, at ſame time, I was every whit as unwilling to take affronts: That, by my inſtructions from the College of Medicine, I was ordered to be under his Excellency's orders; and that I ſhould receive orders from no other, unleſs o-

therways directed by the Medicine Chancery. At this the Prince ſeemed very well pleaſed.

The tables were turned. Balotnicoff imagined that I would be at once diſgraced; but this day began a mutual kindneſs betwixt this good Prince and me, which continued ever after. He happened to aſk me, How I came ſo ſoon to be acquainted with Ruſſian vocables? for, tho' I could not keep up converſation in the Ruſſian language, I had learned many vocables. I told him, and produced a vocabulary in Latin and Ruſs; at this he expreſſed great ſatisfaction in Latin; but after this, even after I had made great progreſs in underſtanding and promptly ſpeaking the Ruſſian language, he ſpoke with me ſeldom in any other language than Latin.

He now gave me, not only a general invitation to his table, but inforced it as my duty, during the reſt of our journey to Taverhoff, and ordered me always to ſit near himſelf for the conveniency of diſcourſe. This was a terrible blow to Balotnicoff. I thought he would have burſt with inſignificant malice. By this means the Prince came to be made acquainted with Captain Carrabine's diſpute, and his reaſons for ſending me, ſo much contrary to common ſenſe, and the intereſt of the ſick in Taverhoff, as Mr Burman was unable to attend them.

After

After this I keenly cultivated the love of all the officers, except Balotnicoff, whom I avowedly despised; and indeed, he at last was ridiculed and despised by the whole command. He was a gentleman by birth, but poor, had no education, and therefore was made a cooper to the fleet by Peter the Great. His case had been, two years by past, represented to the Prince, who, by his interest, got him made a midshipman, which is of equal rank to lieutenant in the army.

We now travelled on, without any thing remarkable happening, till we arrived at Senkoff on the river Askol. The weather here had been mild, and during the winter but little snow, which, by the influence of the sun, was fast melting, so that in many places there was none. We here propos'd to sell our sledges, and take to carts, but the Cossacks would give nothing for them worth our acceptance. They also informed us, that, further on, we would have very deep snow. Upon this the Prince ordered us to lash our sledges upon carts, which the Cossacks procured, with an additional number of horses. Thus equipped, we marched on, not so much afraid of the Tartars as formerly.

We for many miles passed over little hills and large vallies. After refreshing ourselves and horses at a wood in the night-time, we proceeded, and in the morning went up by a very easy ascent of some versts, a rising ground,

ground, from the top of which we discovered, at about four or five versts distance, the beautiful town called Kamenka, situated in the middle of a very extensive plain, upon the banks of the Askol; the descent from this height was very steep. The Prince was foremost, our engineer immediately before me, and three writers in a sledge mounted on a cart, were a considerable way behind me. We had proceeded but a little way down the hill, when I was alarmed with an excessive noise from the writers cart. Looking about, I saw that their horse had taken fright, and was galloping directly upon me. My driver could but only clear the way, when they passed my wheels very near, and, their driver having fallen from his seat, their horse overturned the engineer's cart and horse, whereby it was all broke to pieces.

It affected me much to see at once three writers and our engineer lying motionless on the ground. I went to them, and, upon enquiry, found that they were only extremely frightened; but the engineer lay still on the ground like another Hercules, as he was a remarkably big man. He could not speak, but groaned. I caused Mr Bowman bleed him instantly, put him into my cart, and drove on to Kamenka, where every thing was done for his recovery, agreeable to the art of surgery. He recovered very well, nor did he ever forget my care, and my readily yielding

my

my cart to him, gained me good will from the whole command: And the good Prince returned me thanks publicly, for what I would, in the like circumſtances, have done to my enemy, as I told them.

We met with nothing worth relating after this, till we arrived in Taverhoff, but I muſt acquaint the reader, that the city of Ribna is the moſt beautiful I ſaw in the Ukraine. It is large, and has ſix or ſeven churches. The laſt day of our travels was a continued thaw, which obliged me to walk on foot more than 10 verſts. At laſt, about eight o'clock at night, I arrived on the 15th of January, having travelled 776 verſts in ten days.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

What happened after my Arrival in Taverhoff, &c.

NOT being able to get lodgings, though fatigued and wet, I went to the Prince, with whom were many officers, and my old acquaintance Captain Carrabine among the reſt.

The Prince no ſooner ſaw me, than, having been informed of the cauſe of my delay, he ordered Carrabine to give me a lodging with Mr Burman the ſurgeon; and, at ſame time, made enquiry at him about the rea-

ſon

ſon of ſending me to Kotchatoff, when he was well aſſured, that he (the Prince) was ſoon to return to Taverhoff; How he durſt demand medicines, which he knew were deſtined for another command? *&c.* In ſhort, the Prince ſpoke a long while concerning his undue attention to the Empreſs's intereſt, and, conſequently, his acting contrary to the Imperial mandate; his deſign to miſlead a ſtranger, and laſtly, his want of humanity, in ſending a young man, who knew nothing of the roads, and could not ſpeak the language, threatening to take his ſoldier from him, who was granted by the admiralty, into a country, not only bordering on, but daily ſkirmiſhing, with the enemy.

He alſo obſerved, that Captain Carrabine was an old officer, conſequently the more culpable, and that, in ſhort, he did not know how he could diſpenſe with paſſing unnoticed ſuch very groſs faults. Here he ended his diſcourſe, and, immediately after, a piece of Ruſſian humiliation began, which I had never ſeen before. The poor captain fell on his knees, confeſſed that all was true that the Prince had ſaid, put him in mind that he was a gentleman, and laſtly, begged, for Chriſt's ſake, that he would pardon him this time, aſſuring him, that he never would again give cauſe for the like reproof. Thus Carrabine's high ſpirit was brought low, to the moſt pitiful degree.

The

The Ruſſians are ſtrongly attached to their religion and cuſtoms. If a crime is any way pardonable, the delinquent will ſcarcely miſs the anſwer of his ſupplication, if he aſks it for the ſake of Chriſt, St Nicolas, the Emperor, or Empreſs. Prince Golitzin could not ſtand out againſt this ſubmiſſive way of aſking, and his ſake for whom he aſked it. He did not let him remain long on his knees, but took him up, embraced, and pardoned him ſincerely, I believe, what he had acted contrary to himſelf; obſerving, that I had it in my power to repreſent whatever difficulties I might meet with, to the Medicine-chancery, the members of which, uſually, as he well knew, having always access to the Empreſs, made but very little difficulty, not only of repreſenting their affairs to all the ſuperior colleges, but effectually to inforce juſtice to be done to their dependents. He told him, that he had received a letter from his good friend Dr Fiſher, the archiator, (in anſwer to one he had wrote him, intreating him to ſend a well qualified ſurgeon, to take care of him and his command) in which he aſſured him, it was his opinion, that the Prince would thank him for the man he had ſent, altho' he was then ignorant of the language, that he doubted not, when he was abſent from his countrymen, that he would ſoon learn the Ruſſian language. He ſaid a great deal more, which I ſhall not here repeat.

Captain

Captain Carrabine knew that every word the Prince had ſaid was true; therefore deſired in Engliſh, that I would forget any thing he had acted diſagreeable to me. I took him by the hand, gave him a hearty ſhake, and aſſured him, that, if ever an opportunity offered, in which I could be of ſervice to him, he would experience my ſincere readineſs to oblige him. Thus ended this important affair.

Captain Hertzenbergh, a Dane, Lieutenants Every, Smallman and Luggar, Engliſhmen, came and welcomed me to Taverhoff. They had been upon the Aſophian ſea, or Palus Mœotis, laſt ſummer, and were ordered, with 5 or 600 ſailors, to come to Taverhoff, and had arrived there, whilſt I was in my way to Kotchatoff. It is eaſy to any one, who has been ſome months without ſeeing a countryman, to imagine how glad I was, ſo unexpectedly, to meet them. I forgot that I was tired, and, at Captain Hertzenbergh's invitation, we went to his houſe, and enjoyed ourſelves very agreeably till bed-time. Captain Hertzenbergh had learned the theory and practice of navigation in England, and indeed ſhowed me as much kindneſs as my countrymen, or any other could do. Two days after this, Captain Hertzenbergh came to my lodging, before I was out of bed, and obſerving, that I ſlept on my bed laced upon chairs, aſked the reaſon of this. I told him, that Mr

Burman

Burman had no ſpare bedſtead but one, and that a ſurgeon, who was in poſſeſſion of it before I arrived, was troubled with the itch, a diſeaſe I did not like; and that, if the ſummer was once ſet in, I would ſleep in a tent. The captain waited till I had dreſſed myſelf, and invited me to breakfaſt with him. He then let me ſee a ſmall room he had next his bed-chamber, and a ſeparate door by which I could go in or come out at pleaſure, without diſturbing him. He ſaid, if I would accept of it, it would be ſo far from being inconvenient to him, that he would take it very kindly, and think himſelf obliged. I had no objection to his offer, and, in an inſtant, my bed and all my baggage was tranſported to Captain Hertzenbergh's houſe.

I ſhall juſt mention two or three anecdotes which happened this ſummer, and then proceed to more intereſting ſubjects. Theſe officers were ordered here to aſſiſt the Prince in getting veſſels ready againſt the ſummer, which was faſt advancing. The Prince iſſued out orders to the governors of Veronits, Caſan, and Kiove, to ſend, without loſs of time, their complement of peaſants, to cut down timber in the neighbouring woods, to carry it to Taverhoff and Icorits. No leſs than 30,000 peaſants were employed. It may appear to every one very ridiculous to cauſe veſſels of 60 or 70 tons burden to be built with new felled timber; but how ridiculous

ſoever ſuch orders may appear to an intelligent reader, it was really fact; and it is incredible, with what expedition a number of theſe veſſels were got ready againſt May and the beginning of June, and were carried to Aſoph with the ſwelling of the Don, which always happens about this time, from the melting of the ſnow covering ſuch immenſe tracts of land.

The conſequence was, that the ſailors had enough a-do to keep them ſwimming. In ſhort, they were obliged to cork the ſeams every day during ſummer; and, though we were moſt ſucceſsful againſt the Turks by land, we were as unſucceſsful by ſea: For, whereas we could ſend to the Aſophian ſea only ſuch veſſels as theſe, capable to carry four or five, or at moſt ſix ſmall cannon, the Palus Mœotis was covered with large Turkiſh veſſels carrying 60 or 70 great cannon; and it was confidently reported, that theſe veſſels were directed by French maſters and gunners. In ſhort, theſe veſſels frequently fell into the hands of the Turks. The reader probably will aſk, To what ſervice ſuch veſſels could be uſeful? The deſign of them was only to tranſport ammunition and proviſions for the army under the orders of the late Field Marſhal Count Lacy, which ſometimes they effected, but never returned all to Aſoph in ſafety.

Another fleet of this kind was deſtined for the army, under the command of Count Munich, who

who acted on the weſt ſide of the Dneiper; but indeed neither was of great uſe, as will appear, when I relate the progreſs of our arms againſt the Turks.

Mr Smallman was a good natured quiet perſon, and, I believe, would not willingly have quarrelled with any man. He had been, ſince the year 1736, miſerably reduced by the obſtinacy of a diſeaſe, and though he had been under the care of eminent men; yet, as he was obliged every ſummer to ſail into the Palus Mœotis, before his arrival in Taverhoff, he was again in a worſe condition than before he ſet out. I had this winter cured him. He was but recovered, and in a very weak ſtate, when the reſt of our countrymen were ordered, with all their men, to repair to Aſoph; but Smallman was kept by my atteſtation, declaring, that, till he recovered ſtrength, he could do no duty: That at preſent he was unable to perform ſuch a journey, and that it would riſk his life to no purpoſe. This, I afterwards was informed, was very diſagreeable to the haughty Bredal, their inſignificant admiral, as will be related.

One day as we were in the citadel of Taverhoff, a brother lieutenant of his in the fleet, enquired of Smallman, Where he learned the firſt rudiments of navigation? Smallman anſwered, That he was bound apprentice to the coal-ſhips which ply betwixt Newcaſtle and London, and afterwards ſerved in the royal

navy.

navy. Mr Paveloff, for that was the other lieutenant's name, wanted no more than to turn this into ridicule, and indeed was bearing hard upon Mr Smallman, when I ſaid, that I was no ſailor, but that I had heard it often aſſerted by the moſt knowing people in theſe affairs in Great Britain, that ſailors bred in the coal-trade were eſteemed the beſt and hardieſt, poſſibly in the world; and that certainly the Ruſſian admiralty knew this well, elſe they never would have engaged Mr Smallman in the Imperial ſervice. In ſhort, Paveloff anſwered, that as I was no ſailor, he did not direct his diſcourſe to me, and only wanted to talk with Smallman.

Mr Paveloff was very rich, vain, proud, and overbearing; and I obſerved that he wanted to make Mr Smallman a butt to his vanity. It went to my heart to be preſent, and ſee a good natured countryman made the game of a vain empty fellow (for Scots, Engliſh, and Iriſh, are all countrymen abroad.) I begged of Mr Smallman, as he loved his country, his countrymen preſent, and his honour, to ſuffer him no longer, to call him aſide, and let him know, that he would have him either to aſk pardon immediately, or elſe to aſſure him, that he would take the firſt opportunity of doing himſelf juſtice; and, if needful, I aſſured him, he ſhould not want a ſecond. Smallman did ſo, and the conſequence was, Paveloff aſked pardon,

don, which effectually turned a great laugh against him, even by his countrymen. He suspected that I was the cause, (I spoke in English) and as I was but of small growth, young, and had, at that time, more the appearance of a consumptive person than any thing else, as I was exercising myself in a very immoderate fit of laughter, he, unexpectedly enough, collared me, and, without great difficulty, I believe as in jest however, threw me on the ground: I had also got fast hold of him, and held so fast, that he fell over me down the side of the hill, (for it was a rising ground where this happened, and we were on the very top; at the bottom of which were some old docks, where Peter the Great used to launch his new built vessels:) I had no intention to stop the diversion, nor was I in the smallest degree angry, especially as I was dressed in an ordinary green frock, and he in his uniform, richly mounted with broad gold lace; so I very nimbly flew over him, but, still holding fast, tho' he would have been disengaged, I brought him again over me, and thus we tumbled down to the dock, where we were both bedaubed from head to foot. At rising, as we were out of hearing of the by-standers, I assured him, that I looked upon him as a scoundrel, and would embrace the very first safe opportunity of chastising him as such. However, tho' his cloaths were not only rendered useless with nastiness, but in many

places

places torn, yet he affected to treat all that had happened as a joke, and took his friends to witness, it could be nothing else. By their interposition then, a reconciliation was made, and, to confirm it, he entertained us with a few bottles of wine. Indeed, thro' the whole farce, I had enough a-do to look any way serious, frequently bursting out into involuntary laughs.

Soon after the departure of our countrymen, Captain Carrabine was dismissed to St Petersburgh, and one Captain Ruselius, a German, appointed as captain of the port in his place.

CHAP. XXXIX.

Concerning what happened to the Author by Admiral Bredal, &c.

IN the month of February, Bredal arrived in Veronits, and sent word to the captain of the port to provide him a lodging in Taverhoff. Ruselius ordered me to evacuate my quarters. Capt. Hertzenbergh not only had left me his house, but a very considerable quantity of wood for fuel, which Bredal would have undoubtedly burnt. I, considering myself as not under the directions of the port, returned however my compliments to the captain, who was truly a good man.

Instead

Instead of obeying his orders, I desired my servant to yoke my horse in the sledge: While he was doing this, I secured, by barring and locking, all the entries into this great house, and then drove into the desart for an airing, where I remained long enough to give Ruselius and his admiral time to adjust their affairs, and, when late, returned to Mr Burman, dismissed my servant to go home to take care of the house. At Mr Burman's I was told by the admiral's surgeon, that the admiral was very angry that I stopped Smallman, and that he was determined to have a second visitation, in order to carry him along with him: That I had now again incurred his displeasure, by not evacuating the house, according to Ruselius's order; and that, as he had great need of men of my profession, he had heard him say, he would require me by an unanswerable memorial to Prince Golitzin, shewing him his case, and the impossibility of being provided any other way; whereas the Prince had many chances of surgeons passing either to the fleet or armies.

In answer to this, especially as I knew this surgeon was to sup with Bredal that night, I told him, that Mr Ruselius and I, I hoped, would not disagree about my leaving the house, when he was sensible of the cause: That Mr Burman and I jointly had attested Smallman, and that if Bredal, after such attestation,

teſtation, took him, though warranted by the atteſtation of others, I would immediately lodge in the Medicine Chancery a proteſt, and another in the admiralty, in the ſtrongeſt terms. I ſaid that my inſtructions from the Medicine Chancery, and corroborated by inſtructions from the board of admiralty, who, he ought to know, never attempted to contradict the deſign of the Chancery in medical affairs, bore that I ſhould with all poſſible expedition make my repair to Prince Golitzin, and there to take care of his health, and of thoſe under his immediate command.

I ſaid, I was ſurpriſed that any vice-admiral was ſo thoughtleſs as to imagine any perſon, who had the ſmalleſt title to common ſenſe, would run the riſque of diſobeying inſtructions from his principal conſtituents, in favours of a man abſolutely under their orders, and of a perſon, of whom he knows nothing. That I ſhould not heſitate to ſpeak the ſame language, and ſomething more to the admiral, if he urged any ſuch matter; and, in ſhort, tho' Prince Golitzin was ever ſo willing to oblige Admiral Bredal, in this I would obey neither the one nor the other, till they procured me new orders from the Medicine Chancery.

As I ſaid before, a dark cloud hovered over the Prince, and this made him, tho' naturally a quiet good man, ſubmit to many liberties, which men, in no ſhape equal to him,

at

at this time frequently took. I was certain that what I had ſaid would be agreeable to the Prince, eſpecially as I took the blame of refuſal to myſelf; the two German ſurgeons ſtared at my reaſoning, acknowledged the truth of our being only under the direction of the Medicine Chancery, but ſaid that the admiral, was he to hear ſuch diſcourſe, might do me a great injury; becauſe at ſuch diſtance, his power was very great, and his connections with the admiralty and Medicine Chancery might be alſo great. That he was, they had reaſon to believe, alſo a very invective man, and that people greatly ſuperior to me in rank, durſt not take the liberty to withſtand his orders, though not ſtrictly agreeable to the regulations.

I only replied, that I was born in a land of liberty, and was reſolved to ſpeak the language of my heart; and that ſo long as I did my duty to her Majeſty, and was determined to act up to the meaning of the regulations, to which I was ſtrictly bound by my oath; therefore I was certain that no admiral could greatly moleſt me, if I continued to purſue this way. I ſaid much more which I ſhall not, for brevity's ſake, mention; but, as I expected, and indeed, deſigned, the admiral's ſurgeon at ſupper told him every word, and probably more. The auditory expreſſed great ſurprize, as they ſaid, at my impudence: But the admiral, tho' a Dane,

had been long on board British men of war, where he learned his principles of navigation, and likewise, the lengths that British people will go, when hardly used, said nothing but bit his lips, and his acquaintances said it was a sign of displeasure. Next morning I waited upon my Prince, who seemed to be disturbed: He told me that Bredal, for whom he had not the smallest regard, had insisted to take me with him, *&c.* I in return, acquainted him of our discourse last night, and of my reasons for saying that I would not go even if the Prince ordered me. As none were present, he said, I had told what was true, and, in some rapture, threw his morning gown about me, which was a sign of great satisfaction. He however ordered that I should make my appearance before Bredal, and advised, that I might moderate my passion; because it might, some time or other, lie in his power to do me an injury. I accordingly went into a great hall where the admiral was standing with a number of his minions about him: As I was very neatly dressed, he eyed me: Capt. Russelius told him who I was, and as an answer, he gave a nod. I remained about a quarter of an hour speaking to my acquaintances: At last, I made my bow, and went off, not ill pleased that I had no opportunity of making a wider breach, and when I consider the important air, and pride which he clumsily enough assumed,

assumed, I imagine he was as glad to be quit of me.

As this haughty man was determined to carry some of his proposals against such a diminutive antagonist as me, and as it was the only one remaining, orders were issued to re-visit Mr Smaliman, and his own surgeon was to be one of the judges. I shall not here take up my reader's time, nor tire his patience about medical controversies in this affair, against the admiral and his surgeon only, that I assured him, he dishonoured his place in the Empress's service, either in acting according as Bredal would have him, or else, he evidently betrayed his ignorance, in alledging it was safe and possible for a man to do what he was truly not able to perform; or that he run no risque of his life, to make a journey of betwixt 7 and 800 versts, at such a season, considering the dangerous course he had just undergone, and the present feeble and weak condition he was brought to. I told him, it was not enough for him to think to get protection from such a head as his admiral's: He ought to be sure, that he acted according to principles of the medical institutions agreed upon by the best masters, and particularly, according to the faithful observations of the most honourable authors in the profession; that a deliberate action against the truths they asserted, was an acknowledgement of ignorance. I said, I was acquainted

with

with the Archiator, and that he knew me; that I durſt ſay, Mr Burman was a man of more integrity and experience than to join with him: But that ſuppoſing he ſhould, it would rather ſtimulate, than diſcourage me to repreſent the affair more effectually; and that if Mr Smallman ſhould loſe his life after ſuch fair admonition, he and his admiral was moſt juſtly anſwerable to her Majeſty, for ſuch an indirect ſtep, contrary to the tenure of Peter the Great's regulations, and that I would immediately lay my complaint before the Cantoir in Taverhoff, enjoining them to acquaint his admiral with it, before he left Taverhoff, that he might not plead ignorance; that laſtly, the Empreſs had too great a love for juſtice, to let ſuch crimes eſcape puniſhment; a ſurpriſing privilege truly, allowed to great men and judges, thro' many principalities in Europe! Wherever this happens to be the caſe, who can help thinking, if they dare not ſpeak their minds, that ſuch a ſtate is ruled by madmen, or abſolute fools! I ſhall, for inſtance, ſuppoſe that a man obnoxious to a great man, had inadvertently in anger, threatened another, this other aftewards happened to come to an untimely death, by an unknown hand; the man, who formerly had inadvertently threatened him, was ſeized, thrown into jail, tried and condemned to be hanged, and poſitively was hanged, only by the power of a

great

great man of neither honour, honeſty, nor real good judgment: And ſuch a caſe has been diſcovered afterwards by the very author of the murder, either from a diſturbed conſcience, or from a deſire before he left this world to do juſtice to the relations of the perſon, who had innocently been led to the altar as the victim of a wrong-headed great man.

In ſhort, my former declaration concerning Mr Smallman, was a ſecond time confirmed by the admiral's own ſurgeon, tho' very contrary to his inclination: But the fear of being expoſed, tried and degraded, preponderated with him for once to deſert the warm injunctions of his empty headed admiral, and indeed, I did not part with him, till he was ſenſible enough of the poor pitiful opinion I entertained of his admiral and himſelf, which was, in a very ſhort time after this, fully evidenced to be very well founded, as will be faithfully related in its proper place. His ſurgeon adviſed me to go along with him and Mr Burman to deliver our report: This I declined for many reaſons. Thus we parted, nor did I ever ſee either of them after this, ſo that what I have wrote cannot be referred to any other motive, than a natural antipathy I ever had, and continue to bear againſt all ſuch baſe men; nor did I ever heſitate to declare my opinion either to them

them or their friends, let their greatness be ever so extensive.

CHAP. XL.

A geographical description of the province of Veronits, its capital, and a natural history of this country.

THE metropolis of the province of Veronits bears the same name, and lies almost south-south-east from the city of Moscow, distant from Taverhoff 10 versts. The city of Veronits is built upon the south side of a hill, and the river Veronits washes the south side of the city. Upon the top of the hill is a citadel surrounded with a dry ditch, fortified with palisadoes, it is a place of no great strength: In it, the archbishop has his palace, and there are some churches. The whole city is encompassed with a dry ditch and rampart with palisadoes. It is said to contain about 6000 inhabitants: The governor's palace and courts of justice are all built at the foot of the hill*. The province of

* At a distance from the city, especially to the south upon many hills and high grounds, the inhabitants, in former times; probably, before the Ukraine was peopled, formed rickles of stones, or cones of earth where centinels were placed with tar barrels or other combustibles, to give notice to the cities and countries of the approach of the

of Veronits has the province of Moſcow on the north. Bielogorod and Kiove provinces on the weſt; Little Tartary on the ſouth; Penzinſkoi, Sinbirſkoi and part of the kingdom of Aſtrachan on the eaſt. In 47 degrees 10 minutes north latitude on the ſouth, by 63 degrees 45 minutes eaſt longitude, on the eaſt by 54 degrees three minutes, on the north, and by 54 degrees 10 minutes eaſt longitude on the weſt. A great part of the Ukraine is ſubject to the provinces of Veronits and Kiove. The province of Veronits is very juſtly reckoned a natural, rich and fertile country, there are indeed many great deſarts in it, only from want of water, for on brooks and rivers are many very large and populous cities and villages; excepting its ſouthermoſt borders in Little Tartary on the Don, which, though a rich pleaſant country, does not ſeem to be well inhabited: This proceeds, I ſuſpect from their fear of the Crim Tartars; for, unleſs a colony of warlike men forms and fortifies a town at once, there can be no ſafety for a few inhabiting the open country, as no manner of truſt is to be put in the Crim Tartars, nor indeed in their protectors, the Turks. Taverhoff lies ſouth weſt

the enemy. Theſe are ſtill remaining, as with us in Scotland, and I was informed, that in ſuſpicious times, two horſemen were appointed by each of theſe, who, when they perceived any conſiderable body of men travelling from the enemy's country, immediately ſet fire to the combuſtibles, and made their repair to places of ſtrength.

weſt from the city Veronits, built by Peter the Great on the ſouth banks of the river Veronits, which runs into the Don at the diſtance of about two verſts from Taverhoff. Two thirds of Taverhoff are ſurrounded by the rivers Don and Veronits. The low flat grounds are covered over with thick woods and lakes, after the floods of May and June are over, which, I preſume, makes Taverhoff very unhealthy. About mid-way betwixt Veronits and Taverhoff, Peter made a long, ſtrong, high dyke, with a lock in it, for confining the waters of Veronits, in order to float the ſhips he built there. He made another of the ſame materials, but much ſtronger and higher, upon the Don, three miles from Taverhoff. The dyke alone is more than two verſts in length, and has two ſluices in it; by the help of which great locks, it is almoſt incredible, what a depth of water he aſſembled, by which he launched ſhips of war of 70 guns, ſome of which I have ſeen ſtill preſerved in Taverhoff; and by this conflux of water, he carried theſe great ſhips to Aſoph; which, when the laſt peace was made with the Turks, in his life time, were again, by the ſame care and art, brought back to Taverhoff, laid up on dry ground, and ſhades built over them, I ſuppoſe only to perpetuate the memory of that great Emperor.

Taverhoff is built very regularly, with the ſtreets interſecting one another at right angles,

all

all of wood: A fine palace ſtands on the weſt end of the town, with good gardens, where the Prince lived, built of the ſame materials. The fort lies to the weſt of this, in which every thing neceſſary for ſhip-building, and magazines of all ſorts, are kept. The citadel is made of earthen ramparts paliſadoed, with baſtions at the corners, (it being an exact ſquare) mounted with cannon. To the weſt of this, is a village inhabited by 3000 ſoldiers, for the ſafety of the place. Taverhoff is inhabited only by ſailors, and a few fiſhermen. I preſume this policy is not bad, becauſe the ſame ſpirit of envy takes place in Ruſſia, as in many other nations, betwixt ſoldiers and ſailors. They never can agree, for in St Peterſburgh, though under the immediate diſcipline of the ſupreme government, their animoſity was ſo ſtrong, that, in my time, the guards and ſailors have fought, notwithſtanding ſevere orders to the contrary, pitched battles, where ſome on both ſides have been ſlain: At laſt, however, they were reſtrained from this by the Empreſs Anne.

Certainly the province of Veronits is one of the moſt plentiful countries in the world, comprehending great part of the Ukraine; for the numbers of our armies and fleet, altogether acting againſt the Turks, with an army for the protection of the Ukraine, were no leſs than 150,000; add to theſe 40 or 50,000 peaſants employed in the different works of ſhip-building, all which were ſup-

plied with provisions from the provinces of Veronits and Kiove, nor did I ever learn, that any provision was brought from any other province of Russia into this, during the whole war; yet, for all this, I have known an ox bought for a ruble; a large sow, killed and cleaned, for 3 s. 6 d. a goose or turkey 2 d. or at most 3 d. a hen 1 d. and so forth. I have often bought a bag of oats, equal to four bushels Winchester measure, for about 3 s. 6 d. Large magazines of provisions, during the war, were kept in many fortified cities in this province, always in good order, so that the army, when on the Ukraine, never suffered the smallest want of any thing.

The desarts, when they are watered with a few showers of rain in the summer, produce grass in abundance. The banks of the rivers are like gardens, producing many vegetables, which we, with all our art, can scarcely cultivate in ours. Hops and Sparrowgrass grow luxuriantly every where; their apples are not good; pears, from which we have made, for a mere trifle, the best perry I ever tasted, grow wild; great variety of the medicinal plants, used in the apothecaries shops, grow only by the richness of the soil.

The rivers afford food and all conveniency to different kinds of water-fowl, such as swans, different sorts of geese and ducks, snipes, *&c.* The desart produces heath-fowl of different kinds, bustards, cranes, partridges, quails,

quails, *&c.* Quadrupeds, harts, ſeveral ſorts of deer, wild ſwine not very plentiful, hares, wolves, foxes, bears, and a very beautiful animal, called by the natives ſurks, which burrow under ground, and live far from any inhabited place, are of a brown colour, ſomething like a lap-dog, but have large eyes and whiſkers, and only four large teeth in the fore part of their mouths, are exceſſively fat, ſit at or near their holes, and, when they ſee any man, whiſtle very loud two or three times, then retire. They live as it were in colonies, for they are always found in large bands. The rivers and lakes are full of very fine fiſh, ſuch as ſturgeon, ſtirlet, pike, tench, perch, carp, *&c.* In ſhort, nothing is wanted to make Veronits the happieſt country in the world, but liberty and mild government! What is in the bowels of the earth, I know not, for the inhabitants, having no need of any thing more than what nature has ſo plentifully provided for them, ſeek after nothing elſe.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLI.

Concerning the Russian and Turkish War, from the Year 1736, till the latter End of the Year 1739.

DURING the two years I staid in Taverhoff, I had many opportunities of being informed concerning the operations of our armies and fleets, by gentlemen who had been eye-witnesses. I shall, however, for brevity's sake, only give a general relation of what happened every summer, without entering into very many, though brave, petty actions. Mighty empires, it is well known, like children, quarrel, and agree again after they are tired. They are both in the right, and both in the wrong; as this is often the case, I shall not say whether the Russians or Turks were in the wrong, but so it was, war was declared by the Russians against the Turks and Tartars in 1736, and two armies were ordered to act immediately. The first set out under the command of the brave Count Muinich, who, without loss of time, laid siege to Asoph, where he lost a great number of brave men, nor could he take the city. Another army was getting ready by the wise, the humane, the brave Count Lacy. These two great men were both field-marshals in the armies

mies of Ruſſia. They were both great experienced generals, but their characters are different. Count Muinich was a German from Heſſenhumburg, an intrepid, bold man, but endeavoured to carry all his enterpriſes at once; he therefore had no notion of ſparing even his own men. Count Lacy, under whoſe immediate orders I ſerved two years, was an Iriſh gentleman. He was at the ſiege of Limrick, and followed King James VII. to France: He ſerved the Emperor of Germany, and at laſt the Empire of Ruſſia: He was at the famous battle of Narva, and many have told me, that it was owing to that gentleman that the whole Ruſſian army was not cut to pieces; for he wiſely deſtroyed the roads, ſo that the victorious Charles could not paſs. The univerſal character he bore in the Ruſſian army, by all ranks of men, joined to what I have ſaid, is, that, when he commanded the army, he never fought a battle, but he was victorious; he never laid ſiege to any place that he did take.

At the ſiege of Dantzick, they commanded by turns every week. After they had made 1500 French priſoners, it was determined in a council of war, to chaſtiſe the citizens for galling the Ruſſians with their artillery from the walls, during their action with the French, who had taken protection under the walls of Dantzick. The marſhals agreed that the citizens ſhould be chaſtiſed, but they differed

differed far in the manner of attack. Count Muinich wanted to ſcale the walls inſtantly, deſpiſing ſuch a neſt of burghers; but the wary Count Lacy was againſt this, on account of the great loſs of men which muſt neceſſarily be the conſequence, in ſo much that he proteſted againſt the council of war, and never would command with Muinich after this.

His advice was ſoon verified, for, although they ſoon made themſelves maſters of the city, it was with the loſs of 15,000 men. Count Muinich, as I ſaid before, had loſt a great number of his beſt troops before Aſoph, nor had he made the ſmalleſt impreſſion on the city; for theſe reaſons, the Court of Peterſburgh ordered Count Lacy to take the command of Muinich's troops, and Muinich to march againſt the Pericop.

As Count Lacy was marching with the utmoſt expedition alongſt the Don, eſcorted only by a few Coſſacks and barbarous Kalmucks, part of the Kalmucks ſtole his horſes, giving out that they were ſtolen by a party of the Crim Tartars. The marſhal being in the deſart, could not proceed, ſent the remaining Kalmucks in queſt of his horſes, promiſing them their value if they were recovered. In ſhort, his horſes were returned quite fatigued, and the Kalmucks received their reward according to the marſhal's promiſe; but afterwards their villany was diſcovered, and they were glad to return the money to preſerve their lives.

lives. When Count Lacy had taken a view of the city, he caused new works to be made, and the artillery, especially the mortars, to be placed, so as to reach their great powder magazine; at same time he ordered two large praams to be stationed under the walls of the city. By this change of operations, the greatest powder magazine was blown up by a bomb, which, as was reported, destroyed at least one third of the city, upon which the Turks delivered it up, with the cannon, mortars, and ammunition remaining, but agreed to transport as many Turks as chused to go to the Crim, with their proper effects, and this he did with great exactness. Count Munich destroyed the Pericop, sent many prisoners to Petersburgh*, and these operations concluded the campaign this year.

CHAP. XLII.

The Operations of the Armies in the Year 1737.

EARLY this summer, as General Leslie, a gentlemen of Scots extraction, was, with a small body of men, passing from one part of the Ukraine to another, he was attacked by a large body of Tartars. It was said,

* The Russians had a small fleet in the Don, stationed to carry provisions and ammunition to the army under the command of Count Lacy at Asoph.

that

that he ſent off expreſſes immediately, to a German, Major-General Heim, at no great diſtance, who, had he been willing, might eaſily have relieved that brave man. General Leſlie encouraged his men not to deliver themſelves up priſoners, but die like men; which accordingly happened. The Tartars got ſome ſpoil, but did not make one priſoner: Some alledged, that his ſon was made priſoner, but if ſo, he was certainly mortally wounded, for he was never heard of, and, had he been alive, the Tartars would have preſerved him for ranſom. Heim was ſhot to death, for neglect of duty.

General Lacy marched from the Ukraine, with an army not exceeding 40,000 regular troops, but a conſiderable body of Coſſacks and Kalmucks joined this army, paſſed the Rotten Sea, or Guiloi More, upon a bridge of boats, beat the Turks and Tartars where ever they met them, returned to the Ukraine loaded with honour, ſpoils, and many priſoners*.

Count

* I cannot paſs by the operations of a ſmall flotilla of Ruſſian boats, acting on the Palus Mœotis this year. They carried ſome ammunition and proviſions for the army under Count Lacy's orders, as they were returning back to Aſoph. One of them, commanded by a French gentleman, L'Efremery, ſtruck upon a ſand-bank. The Turks obſerved it, and cannonaded it very briſkly, being far from the reſt, and not protected by the army. The brave L'Efremery laid trains to blow up his veſſel, then he ſent all his men aſhore, to make their eſcape to the reſt of the fleet, which was at ſome diſtance. The Turks having ſilenced L'Efremery, and having obſerved the men making their retreat

Count Muinich marched from Kiove with a regular army, consisting of 40,000 troops, and many thousands of irregulars, passed the Boristhenes, not far from Kiove, upon pontoons, and, in his march towards Otchakoff, drove with great slaughter all his enemies before him into the city of Otchakoff, (called in other books Oczacow.) An admiral was ordered to attend this army with a fleet of small craft, loaded with provisions; but (it was said, through fear of a Turkish fleet lying opposite to Otchakoff) he did not come up in time. The desart was covered over with great plenty of grass, but it was withered and quite dried up, by the continued drought, which frequently happens in these countries, at that time of the year. The Russians no sooner had arrived in the neighbourhood of Otchakoff, than the Tartars set fire to the grass in the desart. The Russians were obliged, to preserve their camp, to set fire to the grass round it, that the two fires, meeting at a great distance from the camp, might be the less troublesome to the army, and dangerous to their magazines of powder. The consequence of this was, that there was no grass left for the cavalry, but what grew on the banks of the river; add to

treat by land, sent several boats to bring off the vessel; when L'Efremery observed the vessel full of Turks, he set fire to the train, and blew up his vessel, himself, and a good number of his enemies.

this misfortune, that the flotilla, with provisions for the army, was not arrived, nor could the marshal get the least account of it.

Upon this, a council of war being summoned, they were nearly unanimous to retire. In councils of war, the youngest constantly speaks first, and the marshal gives his opinion last of all. The memorable brave General Keith, being second in command, advised them, that it was absolutely impossible to retire, without the help of their flotilla, that if this advice was attempted, they must kill all their horses, lose their artillery, and destroy their ammunition and baggage; because there was no forage remaining; that there was not provision for the army, even at short allowance, for above six or seven days; that, lastly, it was his opinion, the attack of the city should not be delayed, and pointed out the manner of attacking it, offering his service to command in the most dangerous place, tho', by his being second in command, this offer was irregular.

The field-marshal agreed to his advice, plan, and method: Some said, that though Muinich loved Keith, yet he was surely jealous of his growing greatness, as he was the darling of the whole army, both regular and irregular. From whatever motive it happened, the Count adhered to General Keith's advice, and, in the night-time, a body of veterans were lodged in an old Turkish redoubt, which

which lay upon the banks of the river, and at break of day, Gen. Keith led a body of 3 or 4000 men into the dry *fossa* which surrounded the city, which brought the greatest part of the bravest Turks to that side, they fearing that the Russians would scale the walls immediately. Whilst the besieged were in the greatest consternation, and bringing their bravest force against the marshal, who had time to play his mortars and cannon from the proper places agreed upon, and was soon wounded in the knee with a musquet-ball. However, he gave orders never to leave the attack till the city surrendered, which, he assured them, would very soon happen, and then was carried to the camp by six granadiers. About this time, as was expected, a large body of Spahis rushed out of the east gate, passed by the old redoubt before mentioned, and attacked the Russian camp; but it was too well fortified by the *chevaux de frise*, cannon, and small arms, for them to make the least impression upon it. Upon this, the regulars rushed out, and, at the very first attack, the men formerly mentioned, lodged in the old redoubt, made very dreadful slaughter from behind, and, about this very time, a large bomb broke through their great magazine, which blew it up, with great part of the city. The Spahis, being so hotly handled, fled with great precipitation, and in the greatest confusion, running the gauntlet, as they passed

ſed by the old redoubt, the Caſſocks, and others, entered the gate with them, bravely maintained their poſt, and kept the gate open, till greater numbers coming in, maſtered it and the city.

In public foreign papers it was ſaid, that the Ruſſians beſieged it four days; but the account I have given, I believe to be true, as I had it from gentlemen who were preſent; and, though the Ruſſians might have been before it four days, yet, I'm perſuaded, the city was taken on the very ſame day in which the firſt attack was made. Be that as it will, a very terrible maſſacre enſued. The Turks continued obſtinate, and many Ruſſians were ſlain, which ſo incenſed the victors, that, for ſome time, they killed every living Turk they met with, ſparing neither men, women, nor children.

Tho' my intention is to make my relation very ſhort, yet I cannot help mentioning two brave actions performed by a countryman from Aberdeen, as I was informed, whoſe name was Innes. Mr Innes, lieutenant in the Horſe Guards, aſked, and obtained leave, from the Empreſs, to ſerve under Count Munich, as a volunteer. He was riding at a ſmall diſtance before the field-marſhal, but in his view, through the ſtreets of Otchakoff. No doubt the officers were much grieved to ſee the ſoldiers ſo mad, that they, at other times moſt obedient, would not

deſiſt

desist from their butchery. Innes called to a granadier of the Guards, who was barbarously exposing a Turkish child, which he had just pierced with his bayonet, and, in a ridiculous manner, was basely diverting himself with the agonies of the poor little innocent. Innes, determined to put a stop to such barbarity, reproved the granadier in very harsh words: The granadier, as I said, mad with rage, threw the infant from him, and, forgetting all duty, made his way to Innes, who, far from deserting the unequal challenge, received him, put his bayonet aside, (for the fellow intended to have stabbed him) and, at one blow severed his head from his body; another soldier, with great indignation, seeing how Mr Innes had served his friend, made at him with his screwed bayonet also, but met with the very same fate. The field-marshal, being an eye witness of Innes's bravery, greatly commended him. This encouraged some other officers, who soon thereafter got the soldiers brought to a sense of their duty.

With no small fatigue they had become masters of the whole city, except one bastion, where some hundreds of Janizaries had lodged: They were determined to maintain that place with the greatest obstinacy, firing, and throwing granades at all the Russians who went near them. The field-marshal, though he had barricaded all the avenues to them, and rendered

rendered their escape impossible, yet was uneasy, that such a number of desperate men still held out, nor did he think that he was master of the city, until they were in his power. He therefore gave orders to bring up the artillery, to destroy them. Mr Innes pitied the fate of so many brave enemies: He observed, that the Turks only had fired at men in arms, and the furious heat of their passion was also by this time much abated. The Turks had a way by which they used to draw up their artillery to the top of the bastion. Mr Innes said to his comerades, that he would take these Turks prisoners, providing the Russians could be restrained from firing upon them as they came down. They dissuaded him from so dangerous an undertaking; but he answered, that he would do it, or die in the attempt, and, sheathing his sword, he rode calmly up to the enemy, amongst whom he espied a pretty youth, of about 15 or 16 years of age. When he came near him, he alighted from his horse, and, taking this youth to be their commander, who indeed was so, approached him in a respectable, though soldier-like manner, called out, Ne boss, which signifies, Don't fear. Then he put him in mind of the dangerous situation they were in, of the field-marshal's designs, desiring them to observe the haste the Russians were in to bring up their artillery, and assured them, that he had risked his own life to save theirs; and that if

they

they would march along with him, he would pawn his life and honour, that the field-marshal, who loved, and esteemed brave men, tho' enemies, would treat them as respectfully as they could expect, providing they behaved with becoming moderation. This discourse charmed them, and accordingly they went along with him, and laid their arms at the field-marshal's feet, who carressed the boy, and kept him always at his own table. Some said, that he was the governor's son, others, that he was son of the Khan of the Crim Tartars. The boy said, that it was the barbarity of the Russians which forced them to take the resolution of fighting to the last man. When every thing was quiet, and proper order again established, the marshal returned Mr Innes thanks, at the same time, constituted him lieutenant-colonel of a regiment of horse, and not satisfied with this, in his report to the Empress, he did not forget to make honourable mention of him, and that he had granted him the highest commission which was in the power of a Russian field-marshal to bestow. By the return of the courier, the Empress dispatched a commission to be filled up by the field-marshal, appointing Mr Innes colonel of dragoons.

Every thing being now accomplished according to Count Muinich's wishes, he appointed Major-general Stoffeln governor of Otchakoff, with 12,000 good men, and returned

turned loaded with victory, honour and riches. It was ſaid, that ſome of the Coſſacks filled, and carried home their caps full of gold; and, undoubtedly, the irregulars got great booty, but the regular troops have it not in their power, as they dare not abſent themſelves from their colours: Thus ended the memorable actions of the year 1737.

CHAP. XLIII.

The Operations of the Armies in the Year 1738.

ADMIRAL Bredal was ordered to get his fleet of ſmall craft ready early, that Count Lacy's operations might not be retarded for want of proviſions and ammunition. This was the reaſon that the ſailors with their officers made ſo ſhort a ſtay at Taverhoff. An order from the admiralty had been ſent to Bredal, to cauſe ſound the bar at Aſoph, to ſee if it were poſſible for ſhips of ſome force to get over it. The admiral reported, that it was impoſſible to get over the bar with larger veſſels than theſe already in uſe, and uſed all his art to perſuade the few Britiſh there, to ſubmit to the ſame opinion; but Capt. Kenzie, Lieutenants Leſlie, Every, and Smallman, were of another opinion, proteſted againſt the admiral's plan, and ſent a report of the ſoundings, ſubſcribed by them all, which they had

had carefully taken. They alledged that it was possible to build vessels fit to carry 20, or even 30 guns: That, if they were provided with a sufficient number of such vessels, they would not only be in a condition to protect their transports, but did not doubt to give a very good account of the Turkish fleet, notwithstanding the largeness of their ships, or the number of their cannon.

Thus these affairs, undetermined by the admiralty, remained when admiral Bredal returned this year to Asoph; nor had the Russians one ship or vessel which could carry more than six small pieces, four or six pounders each, which were not able to engage ships of 70 great guns, of which the Turks had a great number. This inequality of vessels, and discord among the sea-officers, was the true cause of all the misfortunes which befel them this summer.

In short, a fleet, as I was informed by officers belonging to it, was early enough got ready, and Lieutenant Every, an excellent sailor, was dispatched as commander of one of these little ships, or rather covered boats, to bring advice to Bredal, Whether any Turkish fleet was to be seen in the Palus Mœotis? Mr Every, it seems, performed that piece of service to the satisfaction of every person, except the admiral, who designing he should fall into the hands of the Turks, and being disappointed, was determined to oppress him

right or wrong. He accordingly ſummoned the officers of the fleet, and, when aſſembled, let them know, that Mr Every there preſent, had not performed his voyage according to the meaning of his inſtructions. The admiral produced a report, with day-books, ſuch as ſea-officers keep, giving an account of his ſailings, ſoundings, the bays and promontories, which Mr Every had ſeen in his voyage; and laſtly, that on ſuch a day and hour, he Every had ſeen, from his top-maſt-head, a large fleet of Turkiſh veſſels, upon which he inſtantly changed his courſe, and returned with all diligence. The midſhipmen, and others, under Every's command, being examined, ſaid, that Mr Every's books and obſervations were very exact, but denied that they had ſeen the Turkiſh fleet. Mr Every ſaid, that he had acted up to the meaning of his inſtructions: That he had acquitted himſelf as an experienced ſailor, which would be proved by the fleet when they ſailed out: That, as the inſtructions were given to him alone, he was not obliged to ſhew them to any under his command, and that it would have been contrary to the regulations, and to good ſenſe, ſo to have done.

He likewiſe plainly told the admiral, that, when he took his leave of him, he Bredal enjoined him to ſpeak of the deſign of his ſailing to none, which Bredal denied. Mr Every ſaid, that if the admiral had intended, that

any

any number under his order ought to have witneſſed his having ſeen the Turkiſh fleet, he ought to have given it as part of his inſtructions; and laſtly, that as he was the principal commander, and intruſted with the whole expedition, his report and word of honour ought to gain credit. Bredal's council of officers, however, would not blame Mr Every; but the proud admiral, without loſs of time, ordered the fleet to ſail, openly deſpiſing Every's report, giving out that he did not believe there was any Turkiſh fleet in that ſea.

In this, however, he was deceived, and a ſmall ſhare of prudence and good ſenſe might have convinced him that either the Turkiſh fleet would early put to ſea this year, or that in ſo many thouſand Turks, there were none who had power and judgment enough to prevent the Ruſſian boats from doing them probably more miſchief than they did in the year 1737; for had it not been for the ſmall flotilla, Marſhal Lacy never could have paſſed his armies into the Crim by the Guiloi More. The Ruſſian flotilla ſailed, directing their courſe weſt towards the Crims, ſteering as near the northern ſhore as they could, and ſounding frequently. They at laſt arrived at a promontory, from which neigbourhood Mr Every had reported that he had diſcovered the Turks. None were here ſeen, and the admiral exulted greatly. Every ſaid, that he

had

had no orders to advise the Turks to wait in this place; but that he very probably would see them before they reached the Guiloi More. The provident admiral was so very secure, that he ordered the flotilla to drop anchor during the night time, in the bottom of a deep bay about 300 versts distant from Azoph. Next morning, the weather was so hazy, that they could not see a cable's length before them: About 11 o'clock *A. M.* the air cleared up, which discovered the whole Turkish fleet in the mouth of the bay, hemming in the Russians. They were not idle, their great guns reached the flotilla; and in short the bravest Russian, that is to say the admiral, and a few of his elect, were first ashore, and happy were they who gained it. I was not informed of any great loss of men on our side, but I was well informed that the Russians destroyed their own fleet by sinking and burning it; and in short, rendered every thing useless to the Turks. The Russians cast an entrenchment, and mounted a few cannon ashore; nor durst the Turks land to attack them. A memorable incident happened at this time, which I cannot pass by in silence; it was this: The entrenchment was not finished, when the brave admiral sent for some of the principal captains, acquainting them that he was taken very ill, and as there was no proper medicines in the desart, he determined to go for help by land to Azoph,

and

and therefore he would be glad that they would accompany him. Captain Kenzy flatly refuſed, telling him that he was reſolved to remain, live, or bravely die with thoſe under his command: The admiral however went off, drawn by oxen, accompanied by ſome of his friends, and left the diſtreſſed ſailors and a few ſoldiers to Brigadier Lukine, a far better commander.

The brigadier, having rendered every thing uſeleſs to the Turks, decamped and took a few ſmall cannon and ammunition with him, drawn by the cattle they had brought with them for freſh proviſion. The brigadier, a Ruſſian gentleman, by his good deportment, had gained not only the eſteem of the few ſoldiers, but of all the ſailors and their officers. His conduct and bravery was well known to them all, and glad they were of the change. They had not travelled 100 verſts, till about 10 o'clock *A. M.* they ſpied a great duſt in the deſart, approaching towards them. Lukine ordered the ſailors to take the charge of the cannon, and formed the ſmall army into what is called by them, Battalia de Carrie, the ſame, I ſuppoſe, which we term hollow ſquare. In this order, they had not marched long, till they diſcovered about 6000 Turkiſh horſe well appointed, making all the haſte they could to get up to them. The brigadier gave ſhort but clear orders, which were well obſerved. In ſhort, the

the Turks bravely advanced without order, (according to their cuſtom, when they deſpiſe the ſmall number of enemies) to the very points of our bayonets: When, the ſignal being given, immediately began a regular fire platoon-ways from the ſquares, interſperſed with hand granades, whilſt the ſmall cannon raked them every way, ſo that they were ſoon weary of this drubbing, and rode off, rather faſter than they had approached, leaving ſome hundred horſe in the field for uſe, which our poor men had much need of. A very few of our men were wounded; for the Turks were ſo ſoon put into confuſion, that the affair was over in about half an hour, and indeed it is worth remarking, that one midſhipman only was killed by a cannon ball, during this amphibious expedition.

After this, they proceeded to Azoph without any other hindrance. No hiſtory, I am perſuaded, can give an account of ſuch another military affair: An admiral, under pretence of ſickneſs, left his command, and arrived, drawn with oxen, with a few of his own kidney, and his ſailors bravely equipped on horſeback!

Quid faciant leges ubi ſola pecunia regnat,
Et ubi paupertas vincere nulla poteſt?

Our admiral Byng ſuffered death for a leſs crime, in my opinion: But Bredal, it was ſaid,

ſaid, was protected at that time by the moſt formidable Duke of Courland.

At their arrival in Azoph, all was in confuſion: The admiral's conduct was highly cenſured by the Britiſh, who ſpoke their minds too freely to the admiral's face. The admiral was juſtly blameable by all ſorts of people, but they ſpoke with reſpect. The Britiſh were blamed only for imprudently telling the admiral that he was a coward, and ought not to command brave men. A court-martial was ordered to proceed againſt them, which was compoſed of the admiral's friends, and it was reſolved that Captain Kenzie and George Leſlie ſhould be diſmiſſed the Empreſs's ſervice, and ſent out of the Empire without an honourable diſcharge, or paſſport: That Lieutenants Every and Smallman ſhould ſuffer death. I had an early account of all theſe proceedings the enſuing winter from three ſea officers, who, at the ſame time, delivered me a letter from Lieutenant George Leſlie, and a pacquet of letters, in which, one was directed to Mr Rowndaux the Britiſh reſident at St Peterſburgh, another to Count Golovine, one to Mr Bell of Antermony, and one to Mr George Napier merchant there, pointing out the moſt unjuſt and barbarous proceedings of the admiral, and deſiring only that, by their means, the Empreſs might be acquainted with it, ſo as juſtice might be done to them.

I could

I could do nothing without the help of Prince Golitzin; and therefore, without loſs of time, acquainted him: He deſired that I would not mention my having ſpoken to him, or to any perſon, but that he would that very night diſpatch for St Peterſburgh the acuteſt courier in Taverhoff, and ſaid, that I might take my meaſures accordingly, with great ſecrecy. I ſent for the courier immediately; he ſaid, that at, or near Moſcow, a party of ſoldiers was ſtationed on purpoſe ſtrictly to examine all paſſengers, for fear of the plague, which raged at this time with great devaſtation in the Ukraine, and that although it would be aſcertained that Taverhoff was quite free, yet they certainly took all letters from private people, and burnt them. I put a piece of money into his hand, and aſſured him that I would be more generous when he brought me an anſwer that the packet was received in St Peterſburgh. He took my money, and ingeniouſly made a hole in the thick ſole of his ſledge, in which he concealed the packet, and ſo was carried ſafely to Peterſburgh: Upon which, an order was diſpatched to Bredal, commanding him to ſend his priſoners to the admiralty, where I ſhall leave them, and proceed.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLIII.

A continuation of the ſucceſs of the Ruſſian Army.

IN the beginning of March, a great body of Turks and Tartars deſigned to make an eruption into the Ukraine, of which Lieutenant General Count Douglaſs having had certain notice, laid wait for them. They, deſpiſing his ſmall army, attacked him with their wonted fury, but were ſeverely drubbed, loſt a great many thouſand men killed on the ſpot, had many priſoners taken, and the Khan's great ſtandard fell into his hands.

The next operation worth notice, is the ſiege of Otchakoff, by a body of about 80,000 Turks and Tartars: Major General Stoffeln was commander in the city; he was left with 12,000 regular troops laſt year, by the army under the command of Count Muinich; but the plague raged in the garriſon with great violence through the whole winter, which had carried off upwards of 6000 men, the remaining were, many of them confined to the hoſpital, and daily dying in great numbers. He therefore, for the benefit of freſh air, had ordered the garriſon to encamp in the neighbourhood of the city, except ſo many as neceſſarily were obliged to mount

guard in and upon the walls. When they were in this deplorable ſituation, ſome of his irregulars, who had been ſent to ſcour the deſart, brought him certain advice, that a very conſiderable army were marching towards Otchakoff. He without delay beat to arms, and every thing was immediately in the beſt order he could contrive. I was aſſured by his ſon, and other officers, that ſoldiers, who could not ſtand half an hour at once, mounted the walls. In ſhort, the Turkiſh army beſieged them vigorouſly three days without intermiſſion, to little purpoſe, tho', had they known the deplorable condition the garriſon was in, it is probable they would not have given it over: They left near one half of their army dead under the walls, which the garriſon, (almoſt exhauſted) threw into the Boriſthenes. The plague raged with more violence than ever, both here and in Kinburn: This obliged the Ruſſians to deſtroy theſe ſtrong cities, and retire to the Ukraine.

The famous Donduk Ambo was the righteous Prince of the Kalmucks; the Empreſs Anne, however, placed another, by the name of Donduk Daſhee, over the Kalmucks at the death of their laſt Prince. Donduk Ambo would not ſubmit to yield up what he thought his right by lineal deſcent. The greateſt part of the Kalmuck nation joined him, and being afraid to live in the deſarts

of

of Aſtrachan their native country, they fled to Cuban Tartary, ſituated on the ſouth ſide of the Palus Mœotis, and put themſelves under the protection of the Grand Signior, four or five years before the war broke out. Donduk Ambo did not like his new protector, nor yet the Tartars of Cuban. At the beginning of the war, he would not aſſiſt the Turks againſt the Ruſſians; but let our generals know, that, notwithſtanding what had paſſed betwixt the Court of Peterſburgh and him, if the Empreſs would permit him to live in peace in Aſtrachan, and reign over the Kalmucks, he would aſſiſt the Ruſſian arms with 40, or even 60,000 brave men: This was agreed to, and preſents ſent from the Empreſs to Donduk Ambo confirmed this agreement; amongſt other preſents, the Empreſs ſent him two ſmall beautiful braſs cannon of two or three pounders, and a fine ſcymitar, with the hilt of gold, richly ſet with precious ſtones. The Cuban Tartars had been troubleſome to him during his ſtay amongſt them; but when he departed to the deſarts of Aſtrachan, they purſued him, until he had the wiſhed for opportunity of trying the metal of his ſcymitar, which he did ſo effectually, that he almoſt extirpated all the fighting men in their country, and returned to the deſarts, (after having ſent ſome thouſands of his men to the aſſiſtance of Marſhal Lacy) with innumerable

herds

herds of the Cuban cattle. I ſhall give a further account of him, and the notable exploits of his princeſs, who was a Circaſſian lady, and my patient, after Donduk Ambo's death.

Field Marſhal Lacy took the field this year with a gallant army of regulars not exceeding 40,000, and many thouſands of irregulars. Let it be obſerved once for all, that whatever our news papers have ſaid, and may ſay, the Ruſſian regular armies never exceed 40,000 regular troops: Though in the late Pruſſian war, our news papers made them exceed that number, I never gave any credit to their aſſertion, becauſe it is altogether contrary to their rules and cuſtom. I ſay, Count Lacy proceeded through the deſart ſtraight for the Pericop, as Bredal's misfortune had diſappointed him. He had not proceeded far when he was threatned by an army of about 120,000 Turks and Tartars. The Count ordered the regulars to form a triangle, and the irregulars to keep in the rear, and form wings to the regulars: After this manner, they proceeded to march daily, notwithſtanding the enemy's great army.

At laſt, the enemy proved more obſtinate than formerly: Upon which, a party of irregulars went out to ſkirmiſh, who giving way, two or three regiments of dragoons were ſent to ſupport them: But, the enemy determined this day to have a general battle,

they

they therefore formed themſelves into the figure of a wedge, and thus, the laſt driving on the foremoſt, drove our dragoons and irregulars before them, who taking ſhelter behind the army left it quite expoſed. A young nobleman, a court favourite, had not only been lately made a colonel, but had leave to pick out the likelieſt men from the whole army: Thus he commanded the moſt ſightly regiment, probably in all the armies in Ruſſia. Ambitious of glory, he had obtained the honour to defend the angle oppoſite to the enemy; it was this regiment the Turks gallantly attacked, and quite routed by which an open paſſage was made into the center of the army. It ſeems, the prudent old field-marſhal foreſeeing that this might happen, had accordingly placed on each ſide of this infant regiment, two old veteran colonels, with regiments proud of their honour. The one was Colonel Johnſton, a Scotſman from Kenneil. The number of ſcars on his body received in the wars of Ruſſia, was an earneſt that he was no coward. The other, as brave, was a Ruſſian; neither of them could count fewer than 70 years of age. Theſe two brave men joined their regiments, and formed the angle in the midſt of the Turkiſh army; their field pieces, ſmall arms, granades, and bayonets, making ſad havock, ſoon drove back thoſe who were without, whilſt theſe who had broken into the heart of the

army

army could get out no where; but, after a terrible maſſacre, were forced to throw down their arms, and beg their lives upon their knees.

Colonel Johnſton aſſured me, that 15,000 priſoners were taken, ſhackled, and ſent to Ruſſia immediately, and it was almoſt impoſſible to number the dead, but that he believed 15,000 more had been killed. Next day, the field-marſhal, before the whole army, returned thanks to theſe colonels and their regiments, acknowledging, that, had it not been for their experience and bravery, the whole army would have been in the utmoſt danger. Old Johnſton, with a ſoldier-like reſolution, adviſed the marſhal, to order his young unexperienced officers, for the future, to be caſed up amongſt the baggage; which, it is ſaid, he did not take amiſs.

Next day, the army marched towards the Pericop, but could not ſee the enemy all that day. Two days after this, the Turks appeared at a diſtance, and encamped at night within 14 verſts of our army. Thus they continued to march, till they were within two days march of the Pericop. After the Ruſſian army was encamped, and every thing in quietneſs, the marſhal cauſed all the dragoons mount their horſes, and leave all their incumbrance, with the greateſt ſecrecy, and each of them to take a foot ſoldier behind him. He ordered,

ordered, at the break of day, on a ſignal given from the army, an attack to be made upon the Turks all at once, on three different ſides of their army, at which time he would be ready to ſupport them with the whole army, and inſtantly ſend off the irregulars to their aſſiſtance. Every thing was done according to orders, with the greateſt exactneſs, the Turks and Tartars were totally routed, leaving every thing to the conquerors; many were taken priſoners, nor did the Ruſſians ever ſee them afterwards, till they arrived at the Pericop.

The following account of Count Lacy's actions at, and after taking Pericop, I had from John Baptiſt, a Capuchine Friar, the marſhal's father confeſſor, and I believe it to be true: He ſaid, that, three days before the Ruſſians arrived at Pericop, it had conſtantly blown a perfect hurricane from the weſt: That, when the camp was formed, and, as ſoon as night came on, he privately ſent for his prieſts to adminiſter the ſacrament to him, a cuſtom he always uſed before he attempted any great action; that done, with a chearfulneſs very natural to him, he ordered a glaſs of wine for the prieſts, and recommended them to take their reſt. He then inſtantly cauſed a few of his beſt troops to get ready, and wait his orders; at the ſame time he ordered many pieces of cannon to play againſt Pericop,

Pericop, and all the drums and muſic in the army to make as much noiſe as poſſible.

He then mounted his horſe, and rode off with the cavalry formerly mentioned, ſtraight to the gut of water on the eaſt end of Pericop, part of that called Guiloi More, and went quite through it, on a hard bottom, nor was it deep. (The Turks had before this given out, that it was bottomleſs, which gained ſo much credit, that the Ruſſians never had attempted to paſs it till that night.) The field-marſhal finding the bottom hard, returned, ordered all the regular army to be got ready, except 12,000 men, with the irregulars, drums, and muſic, which he left with orders not to move from their camp, nor leave off firing and making every other poſſible alarm, during the darkneſs of the night. In the meantime, the marſhal was ſo diligent, that he ſafely marched the army and artillery through that water, without the enemy's having the leaſt ſuſpicion of it; further, that the terrible fire from three batteries (which he had made in ſuch hurry in the night-time, againſt the ſouth and weakeſt ſide of the Pericop) carried the firſt news of the Ruſſian army's being there. Notwithſtanding the great ſurpriſe the Turks were in, they held out till noon, when their walls being demoliſhed, and the Ruſſians making ready for a general aſſault, they ſurrendered themſelves priſoners of war, and that very afternoon were ſhackled,

led, pinioned, and sent off to Russia. After this, the Count marched through all the low country, burnt Bacciesiray, called by the Russians Buchshezeray, and Caffa, with many other towns of smaller note; blew up the Pericop, and returned loaded with spoils, prisoners and honour, and a very great number of fine brass and other cannon. I saw some of them with the Imperial arms of Germany upon them.

Thus the Pericop was taken, with the loss of very few men, by the experience and wisdom of one man, which had formerly cost the Russians, each time they attempted it, many thousand brave men; add to this, that at this time the northern walls of Pericop were much more regular and strong, than ever they had been before the siege.

CHAP. XLV.

A Continuation of the Success of the Russian Arms.

COUNT Muinich marched his army thro' the desarts bordering upon Poland, from the Boristhenes to the river Niester, notwithstanding armies of Turks and Tartars, triple his number, and all their diligence to obstruct his march daily. He was five times attacked in formed battles, and beat them each

time, with no great loſs on his ſide, but with terrible havock of his enemies.

It was late in the year before he could gain the banks of the Nieſter, and, when there, he would have riſked much, to have, at that time, attempted to force a paſſage, ſo far from help, had he not ſucceeded; therefore he returned through the ſouthern provinces of Poland, loaded with honour. There are a kind of Coſſacks, which the Ruſſians call Zaporogs; they inhabit iſlands in the river Boriſthenes, amongſt the falls, which makes it extremely hazardous for any enemy to attack them. They are a neſt of robbers, and ſometimes were under the protection of the Turks, but now are under the Ruſſian government. Theſe are nothing like the Ukraine Coſſacks. They have no wives, nor allow of any women in their iſlands, but have plenty on the banks of the rivers. They compare themſelves to the Knights of Malta, by being conſtantly at war with the Turks and Tartars; that is to ſay, they live by rapine, tho' profeſſing the Chriſtian religion, and therefore have a prieſt or two, are the deſerters, villainous ſcum, and outlaws of all the neighbouring nations. They have laws among themſelves, and ſubmit to a kind of magiſtracy, but what theſe laws are, I preſume few know; and indeed it is probable, they are ſo volatile, that there can no truſt be put in them, their principal glory and profeſſion being to de-

ſtroy

ſtroy mankind. It is true, they ſeldom are taken priſoners, becauſe they neither take nor give quarter, and, I'm told, that they take ſome ſuch oath, before they can be admitted into the community, for they have every thing in common.

The moſt daring and barbarous amongſt them are called Buggateers, which is a title all the Tartar nations give to heroes.

They pretend to fight only againſt the Turks; but I ſhrewdly ſuſpect, that they make inroads into Poland, at ſuch times aſſuming the name of Haydmaks, whoſe abominable cruelties we frequently are made acquainted with in the news-papers. They form a good barrier betwixt the Tartars inhabiting the weſt of the Boriſthenes and the Ukraine; for if their flocks or herds come within their reach, they commonly kill the people who feed them, drive off the cattle, and ſell them to the Poliſh, Ruſſian, or Ukraine borderers.

Complaints had been brought laſt year, to Count Muinich, that ſundry inroads had been made by ſome of his irregulars into the ſouthern provinces of Poland; wherefore, this year, when the whole army was aſſembled on the weſtern banks of the Boriſthenes, before they began to march, the count ordered proclamation to be made, that whoever made any inroads into the kingdom of Poland, ſhould be puniſhed with death.

Though

Though none could plead ignorance of these orders, yet the army had scarcely marched four days, when complaints, well authorised by one of the Polish voivades, were received, declaring, that a small number of Zaporogi had burnt two or three villages to the ground, murdered many of the inhabitants, and carried off all their cattle.

The field-marshal immediately made strict enquiry into this affair, and found it clearly proved, that two of the Zaporogi chief Buggateers were guilty, whom he ordered instantly to be hanged, little regarding the most serious sollicitations which their friends made to spare their lives, who, at the same time, offered the count an immense sum of money, if he would, but for this once, spare them. This year they had sent 6000 men to the assistance of the Russians, but finding that they would be allowed only to act against the enemy, they, in a few days after this execution, withdrew, and retired to their islands.

CHAP. XLVI.

Concerning the Success of the Russian Arms in the Year 1739.

LAST year the Crim Tartars had been so severely handled by Count Lacy, that they made no eruptions into the Ukraine this winter,

winter, and indeed I believe the greateſt number of men able to bear arms, were either killed in battle, or made priſoners. However, the Turks ſupplied them with all the help they could ſpare during the winter ſeaſon; for they had great reaſon to fear, that the Ruſſians would conquer the whole Crim or Crimea, which, if they had done, would have proved moſt dangerous to the Turkiſh empire: For, if ever the Ruſſians can maſter Jenicala and Taman, which command the iſthmus leading into the Palus Mœotis, they will effectually protect a ſafe navigation thro' that ſea; and if their fleet ſhould prove ſuperior to that of the Turks, nothing can hinder their ſailing to Conſtantinople. This I take to be one reaſon why the Turks are ſo much afraid of the Ruſſians having a fleet on theſe ſeas, and that they conſtantly deny them this liberty, by making it one of the principal articles of peace.

Donduk Ambo began early to fill the Cuban country with dreadful devaſtations; not contented with their herds and flocks, he killed or took priſoners all the Cubans who were found in arms; but, tho' the Ukraine was, by the ſuperior talents and care of our victorious generals, ſecured from the inroads of the enemy, the plague made great havock, which ſhall be taken notice of in its proper place. This was the cauſe of our marſhal's leading out their armies ſooner than formerly; and, tho'

tho' they could not march till the ſnow was gone, and the deſarts covered with graſs, they encamped far from inhabited places.

Count Lacy marched about the beginning of June, as formerly: He ſoon made himſelf maſter of Pericop, and marched to the ſouthern parts of the Crim; but, though he met with no conſiderable force to obſtruct his operations, he could proceed no further, becauſe Bredal (either from the confuſion his whole command was in, or from the fright he was put into laſt year, or from the want of ſufficient veſſels) was not in condition to bring either ammunition or proviſions for the army, and the Crim Tartars ſo effectually concealed their grain, that none could be got ſufficient to maintain one regiment, tho' they got ſome cattle. Add to this, that, though, as I ſaid before, the Tartars and Turks durſt not give battle, yet in narrow defiles they galled our army from the heights, where neither the dragoons nor irregulars could purſue them. However, he cauſed burn the towns and cities to the ground, in the countries through which he paſſed, that the enemy might have other employment, during the winter, than making inroads into the Ukraine. When he had diſtreſſed their country as much as poſſible, he returned early into the Ukraine, but two or three regiments had contracted the plague, and were therefore obliged

ged to encamp in the desart till they recovered, which was not till late in winter.

CHAP. XLVII.

A Continuation of the Success of the Russian Arms under the Orders of Count Muinich.

THE following narration I had from gentlemen in the army, who were eye-witnesses of whatever happened. Upon the 5th or 6th of June, the count marched with his victorious army, well apppointed, straight to Chotzim, commonly called Choczim, without meeting with any thing very extraordinary. He carried with him a good train of artillery, besides field-pieces, and arrived on the banks of the river Kniskosske about the 20th inst. In the march two accidents happened, which, altho' they seem may trifling to some, may be agreeable to others, and therefore I shall relate them.

A lieutenant-general was lost in the desart, nor could any notice be got of him during the march of the army to Chotzim. The other was Captain Gray, born in Prussia of English parents, a good officer, and an excellent engineer. The field-marshal ordered him to give directions for placing pontoons over the rivers, and regulating the transportation of the battering cannon, great mortars, and other

other heavy carriages. This captain was in very great friendſhip with a French gentleman, whoſe name I have forgot. The French captain was extremely good natured, lively, and gave himſelf very little trouble to think of weighty matters, or to foreſee what misfortunes might happen by the loſs of a little time, even when engaged in the moſt ſerious affairs. At the time when Mr Gray was bringing down a large piece of cannon from a ſteep bank, which, if not managed with great ſkill, would not only have killed many of the horſes, but might either have run into the river and be loſt, or probably deſtroy the pontoons, upon which, I ſuppoſe, the ſafety of the army did not a little depend. Be that as it will, when Captain Gray was in the greateſt anxiety about the ſafety of the cannon, his friend, the Frenchman, addreſſed him with troubleſome importunity about trifling affairs. Gray, after he had once or twice deſired him to deſiſt for that time, at laſt, in a paſſion, uttered ſome words in German, rather harſh, and the Frenchman not knowing the meaning of them, aſked ſome other of his acquaintances, who, in a ludicrous manner, informed him. After the artillery was carried ſafely over, and the army in march, the Frenchman challenged Gray to give him ſatisfaction. As nothing elſe would do, they retired privately into a neighbouring wood, and there ſatisfied themſelves by wounding each other.

None

None of their wounds proved mortal, but the anxiety of the one for the ſafety of the other, was the cauſe of a conſultation of ſurgeons, and thus it became public.

The premier major of their regiment was an old unpoliſhed Ruſſian. He carried a report of the affair to all his ſuperiors, at laſt to Count Muinich, complaining, that two officers had acted againſt the regulations; that, according to his duty, he had complained of it to all his ſuperiors, from his lieutenant-colonel upwards regularly to his Excellency, and demanded, that, without loſs of time, this affair might be enquired into by a court-martial. The marſhal deſired the major to deſiſt from ſuch proſecution, which the major flatly refuſed, for many reaſons. Upon this, the marſhal kept the report, and diſmiſſed him, without letting him know what he intended to do. The count next ſent for the officers, examined them himſelf, and deſired, that they would, without reſtraint, tell him the truth. They did ſo, but with this remarkable difference, that each endeavoured to perſuade the marſhal, that he only was guilty, and that his antagoniſt was innocent. The marſhal ſoon learned how the affair ſtood, admired their ſentiments of honour, and recommended them to moderate their paſſion for the future, thinking a few hours before they came to extremes; and then diſmiſſed them in a moſt affectionate manner.

Next morning early, their major and they were ſent for to the count's tent. They had not waited long when he appeared, and delivered a commiſſion to each of the captains, conſtituting them majors for their honourable ſervices, and then he gave the major an order to proceed from the army to Oranburgh, with expreſſes to its governor; and that as he was not young, he ſhould there officiate as a garriſon-major, till further orders. This was a bitter doſe, but death would have followed diſobedience. Thus this wrong-headed man, by his foolifh obſtinacy, was obliged inſtantly to march alone through many deſarts, moſt of them infeſted with the enemy, to the diſtance of near 3000 miles, and become a garriſon-major, and probably with the hopes of no ſudden advancement.

During this march, we were frequently in view of the enemy, who were triple our number; but, having been defeated five different times laſt year, with great ſlaughter on their ſide, and a very inconſiderable loſs on ours, it ſeemed that they now deſigned to riſk all in a deciſive battle near Chotzim; and, notwithſtanding their great loſs laſt year, they ſeemed to be certain, that, without great difficulty, they would extirpate this gallant army, which had beaten them ſo frequently; for they drew up all their forces on the other ſide the river Nieſter, and gave the Ruſſians no moleſtation whatever, though they knew that

the

the Ruſſians intended to beſiege the ſtrong fortreſs of Chotzim, from which place they were diſtant only about ſix verſts. The count encamped in a very low ground, having the Turkiſh army on the top of a high ground in front, and another army of Crim Nogas, and other Tartars, conſiſting of at leaſt 100,000 men, on a hill to our left. The Turkiſh army, it was ſaid by many, conſiſted of 20,000 Janizaries, and 60 or 70,000 Spahis. The Ruſſians took the pontoons from the river, and brought them among the baggage. At midnight, the marſhal ſent off, with the greateſt ſecrecy, 500 of our beſt granadiers, under the command of choſen captains, to a gullet in the hill, to the left of the Turkiſh army, with orders to ly concealed, till a ſignal, by throwing up a rocket, ſhould warn them to act according to the orders they had received.

Next morning the Ruſſians were all in a ſtir, and, after prayers, they marched with their field-pieces, and ſome ſmall mortars, chiefly drawn by men; for the hill in ſome places rendered the horſes uſeleſs. Thus they directed their march towards the right, and advanced till the marſhal imagined the Turkiſh cannon might hurt them. The Turks, not doubting that the Ruſſians intended to gain the top of the hill there, had aſſembled all their Janizaries and beſt troops; but they were ſoon undeceived, when they ſaw them ſuddenly march with great diligence immediately

ately under the top of the hill to the left, towards the place where the granadiers were concealed. This unexpected movement put them into great disorder; for they not only had expected them to mount the hill, on the fore-mentioned place, with their best troops, but had pointed their largest cannon that way, which were placed on carriages without wheels, so that they were rendered almost useless on this occasion. Add to this, that the Turkish camp was open near to where the granadiers were placed, that their horse might readily march out and in as need required. In their hurry they advanced to the very place where the granadiers were, and then the signal was given, when they played their part so well, that our field-pieces and mortars gained the top of the hill; with these the Turkish cannon were immediately deserted, and indeed proved of no manner of use to them during the action.

Now, every where among the Turks there was nothing but death and confusion; their camp was set on fire in various places; our cannon, small arms, and granades, made sad havock in front, whilst the bombs were burning and bursting in their camp and rear. After they had lost three-fourths of their Janizaries, they fled in such confusion, that none entered Chotzim. The Tartars made some feeble attempts upon our camp, but never came up in time to help the Turks; and,

and, it was ſaid, they adviſed them to throw every heavy thing away, alledging, that our irregulars, who were quite freſh, would ſoon be with them: Whether the Turks followed their advice, is uncertain, but it is certain, that they threw much away, ſome of which our troops got, but their own Tartars got much more.

One anecdote is very remarkable. The prieſt of a regiment got on horſeback, with a large braſs croſs in his hand, and rode with the foremoſt of the ſoldiers, encouraging them to follow the croſs, aſſuring them, that no hurt could happen to them who did ſo. It is certain, that this prieſt was not wounded; and it is as certain, that he was nobly rewarded by the Empreſs; though it is no leſs evident, that theſe gallant troops needed no ſuch encouragement. It is alſo very dubious, whether many very learned men would venture, ſo implicitly, as to truſt to the ſingular favour of heaven, amidſt the ſound of ſo many thouſand and thundering meſſengers of death?

CHAP.

CHAP. XLVIII.

A continuation of the Success of the Russian Arms, under the Command of Count Muinich.

THE victorious army had now little else to do, but to march to Chotzim, and demand the gates to be opened: They did so: The seraskier indeed required some hours to deliberate, and consult with his friends, what was safe and honourable to be done. However, the answer Count Muinich returned was disagreeable and determined, *viz.* "You shall yourself bring the keys in half an hour; if you exceed that time, not one of the garrison shall escape death." Thus spoke Count Muinich! and at same time ordered the artillery to be brought forward in all haste. However, he needed not have been in such a hurry, for the Turks had great reason to know him well, and did not doubt the veracity of his threats: Therefore the seraskier, without delay, offered up the keys, with the whole garrison at his back, who, with the rest of their countrymen and soldiers, were immediately shackled and sent off to Kiove, under the orders of Lieutenant-general Byron.

In this city of Chotzim, it was said, great treasures were got; and warlike ammunition of

of all ſorts, were found in the greateſt abundance, and no leſs than 300 braſs cannon mounted, beſides other pieces. I have been likewiſe informed, that here they found their lieutenant-general, whoſe name I ſhall not mention, leſt it ſhould diſoblige a good antient Ruſſian family. The general, no doubt, was glad to be reſtored, as he thought, to his liberty, congratulated the victorious marſhal, and returned him thanks for being the inſtrument of his relief: But this ſevere diſciplinarian anſwered him, that, according to the regulations of war, he ought to have taken better care of himſelf than he had done, and not have expoſed ſo reſpectable a character as a lieutenant-general to be taken priſoner in ſuch a manner. He put him in mind, that he ought not to have gone to reconnoitre the enemy, without a certain reſpectable number of choſen troops, to protect him from falling into their hands.

Therefore the marſhal remanded him back to priſon, till a court-martial ſhould determine his fate, which was inſtantly ordered to ſit. By their ſentence, agreeable to the Ruſſian articles of war, it was determined, he had forfeited all his military honour, and therefore he was declared a dragoon, till the Empreſs's pleaſure ſhould be known. The ſentence was juſt, and agreeable to the articles of war, therefore no favour could be granted; none was aſked, ſubmiſſion took place, and he was

obliged

obliged inſtantly to officiate as other dragoons, though he was a gentleman of large poſſeſſions, and one of the principal repreſentatives of a very antient family in Ruſſia. All the favour he aſked of the count was, that he might have liberty to have his unfortunate ſtate repreſented, without loſs of time, to the Court. This was granted, and he diſpatched one of his truſty ſervants to St Peterſburgh in Auguſt, at which time this affair happened. I ſaw him enter Veronits with 40 or 50 attendants, in November following, in his way to St Peterſburgh, tho' only a dragoon.

The ſoldiers upon duty at the gates of the city paid him no reſpect, which indeed was right, and agreeable to the articles of war; but I was grieved to hear them ſay, that now, notwithſtanding his great riches, he was only their brother, *viz.* a dragoon. However, he did not long remain in this ſtation, for he was ſoon appointed governor of the kingdom of Kazan.

Having thus got poſſeſſion of this ſtrong place, Wallachia and Moldavia having no troops to defend them, were at the mercy of the count; but the greateſt part of the inhabitants, being Chriſtians of the Greek profeſſion, needed no compulſion. They were told, and no doubt believed, that, at laſt, the Ruſſians were come to free all the Chriſtians in Greece from the heavy Turkiſh yoke. Thus the field-marſhal made an eaſy conqueſt as far

as

as the banks of the Danube. Some of our news-papers ſaid, that he conquered Bender, but this is a miſtake, as he never pointed that way, well knowing, that if the war went on, he, next ſummer, could fix himſelf ſo firmly in theſe provinces, that all the different people on the eaſt would ſubmit, without great trouble. It was confidently reported, and I believe it to be true, that Count Muinich deſired only 20,000 regular troops to be added to theſe he already commanded, early in the ſummer 1740, and that he made no doubt of putting her Majeſty in poſſeſſion of Conſtantinople; but all theſe grand ſchemes and expectations ſuddenly dropped, by an order from Peterſburgh, giving an account that the Emperor of Germany had made peace with the Turks, and that the Ruſſians had acceded to the ſame, and therefore requiring that the count ſhould evacuate all that country, and return into Ruſſia with all diligence.

He viſited the capital of Wallachia, and carried off all the cannon. In Chotzim, Jaſſy, the Turkiſh camp, and on the road, they got no fewer than 800 cannon, beſides mortars, *&c.* Theſe were all brought to Chotzim; but, when the count received the above mentioned order, he was at a loſs what to do with ſo many braſs cannon. He at laſt determined to ſell them to Jewiſh merchants from Poland, and was content to take at the rate of 1½ d.

per lib. only the Jews were obliged to get them broken at their own expence.

Thus this war ended, it ſeems, to the mutual ſatisfaction of both nations, but to both their great loſs; for altho' the Ruſſians were every where victorious, and had conquered Wallachia, Moldavia, and all the countries lying betwixt them and the Boriſthenes; tho' they every ſummer gave laws to the Crim, and kept or deſtroyed many of their ſtrong places, while their diſtreſſed inhabitants were glad to fly to the mountains; tho' they had almoſt totally extirpated the inhabitants of Cuban, taken and deſtroyed Aſoph, Pericop, Otchakoff, Chotzim, and many other cities; and laſtly, tho' they had defeated the Turkiſh armies at all times, with incredible ſlaughter, and had ſent into Ruſſia innumerable thouſands of priſoners, and brought home very great riches; yet, by the peace, moſt of their conqueſts were given up.

If now we balance their loſſes, we may have a juſt idea of the truth of what I ſaid above. By the peace they got ſome more deſart to the weſt of the river Boriſthenes and ſouth of Poland, than they had formerly. Reaſon, however, ſhows this acquiſition to be of no value to the Ruſſians, who already have, in their own Empire, more uninhabited country, than, moderately ſpeaking, the one half of Europe. The next and only advantage they got, was to deſtroy Aſoph, and render it a deſart; but then all commerce betwixt

twixt the two empires muſt be tranſported in Turkiſh veſſels. It is true, that the Ruſſians have nothing to hinder them (if another war ſhould happen) from marching directly into Cuban.

Tho' the Ruſſians did not loſe many men in battle, yet it cannot be denied, that they loſt great numbers by fatigue, want of water, travelling thro' theſe ſcorching deſarts, and by the plague. Tho' all care was taken to keep theſe loſſes ſecret, yet I ſhall give one reaſon why I ſay ſo: The armies acting on the Ukraine and againſt the Turks, I compute not to have exceeded 120,000 men in all. In the year 1738 theſe armies were recruited with 50,000 men, and in the year 1739 with 100,000 men; add to theſe, the devaſtation made by the plague in the Ukraine. I do not pretend to aſſert any number. I ſhall only inſtance Paveloſſke, and a large village, diſtant from it 20 verſts. In the former, I was credibly informed, that no leſs than 50,000 people died, and in the latter, which was only 10 verſts diſtant from Ikorits, where Prince Golitzin commanded 30,000 men for building veſſels, I was aſſured, that the plague carried off at leaſt 20,000 men: But how inconſiderable are theſe two towns in compariſon of the whole Ukraine? In the year 1739, Dr Miniatty, who was expreſsly ſent to the Ukraine, to give neceſſary directions about this formidable diſeaſe, and

inſpect

inſpect every ſuſpected place, made the number of dead ſo incredible, that I ſhall not repeat what he ſaid, although he was a man of great veracity and honour. Add to this, that what he ſaid was in confidence that I ſhould not ſpeak of it to his prejudice, which now I do not, becauſe he is dead.

At preſent the Ruſſians have it not in their power to act againſt the Turks by ſea, becauſe the bar at Aſoph is not deep enough to float large ſhips, which was the reaſon that Peter the Great was at ſo much expence, after he had demoliſhed Aſoph, in building Tagenrook. He was afterwards obliged to reſtore Aſoph, and fill up, and otherways render uſeleſs the fine new made harbour Tagenrook, by the fatal agreement at Pruth. When a new war ſhall happen betwixt them, I have ſome reaſon to believe, that the Ruſſians will apply all their power and ſkill to conquer the two ſides of the iſthmus leading from the Palus Mœotis into the Black Sea. If ever they ſhould become maſters of this, then Conſtantinople will be in imminent danger, and, I imagine, the Crim will inſtantly beg to be their tributaries, becauſe they can be in no ſafety otherways.

If the Ruſſians ſhould ever get poſſeſſion of that iſthmus, they can bring to it ſhips of as great burthen as any in Europe. They have ſuch great plenty of timber growing on the banks of the Don, that they might build

10,000

10,000 ſhips of the greateſt force; and, if they have good officers, the natives make excellent ſailors; and, where money is, officers will not be long a-wanting. Then they may command commerce at the walls of Conſtantinople, and if that ſhould ever happen, how far it might prove beneficial to Ruſſia, and ſafe to our Levant company to carry their Turky trade that way, I am not politician enough to determine; but one thing I am certain of, and that is, that there ſeems to be no danger from pirates in the Baltick; that the expence of carriage, if rightly managed, betwixt Peterſburgh and Taverhoff, will be very ſmall, and from thence, by the Don to Aſoph in barks, can be but trifling. Moreover, the Ruſſians know their intereſt too well, ever to be againſt a project, which would undoubtedly be of advantage to them in many reſpects. The obſervations I have here made may amuſe, but cannot greatly diſoblige the reader. Schemes, every way more extraordinary, have been projected, and, when all diſadvantages have been fully underſtood and known, have yet proved of ſingular utility to our country.

The Ruſſians can build no veſſels of force upon the Dnieper or Boriſthenes; becauſe it would be quite impoſſible to tranſport them through the cataracts where the Zaporogi live, and they have neither woods nor inhabitants

bitants on either ſide of the river, betwixt theſe cataracts and the Black ſea.

CHAP. XLIX.

Concerning the nature of the climate, and diſeaſes properly endemical, with the Author's opinion of the cauſes.

TO make this chapter the leſs diſagreeable to my readers of all kinds, I acquaint them, that I ſhall enter no farther upon this ſubject, than only ſuperficially to touch upon what is propoſed above, that it may be of ſome uſe both to people educated in the medical profeſſion, and alſo to thoſe who may travel into thoſe parts.

About the middle of March, the weather was temperate, and continued ſo till May, when the heat increaſed conſiderably; and June began with rain. July was more ſerene, ſeldom any ſhowers, but exceſſively hot, the heat and drought increaſed till the latter end of Auguſt: After that, the air was gradually colder with rain till the month of October, or beginning of November, when froſt ſets in. Let it be obſerved about the evenings, after the ſun was ſet, thick ſtinking fogs aroſe from the moraſs and woods conſtantly through the whole ſummer: After the high waters proceeding from the melted ſnow and ice were quite

quite gone, and the waters were confined within their own proper banks, and as the heat came on, a thick ſcum appeared on the ſtagnating waters only, and increaſed with the heat and length of the ſummer: in Auguſt I meaſured them, and, in waters ſurrounded with trees, I found them to meaſure four or five inches deep. Add to this, that in very hot calm weather, they produced a very diſagreeable ſtinking ſmell. In March, the ſnow had no ſooner diſappeared than a thouſand delightful beauties aroſe out of the deſart, but the moraſſes and low grounds were covered with waters till the middle of May *O. S.* then indeed, they appeared like a very rich garden, exhibiting to our ſight and ſmell abundance of different flowers. Here the lily of the valley grows in ſuch abundance, that I queſtion if all the gardens in Britain can produce ſo many as one ſquare mile of Taverhoff moraſs. They produce, as I ſaid before, many other uſeful and pleaſant vegetables; in the day time, one is charmed with the pleaſant notes of ſinging birds, ſuch as blackbirds, thruſhes, larks, *&c.* in the night, the nightingales have frequently diverted me from ſleep. June produces great flocks of water-fowl; the end of July produces fruits, ſuch as water-melons, a variety of different melons, *&c.* but as no gentlemen live here conſtantly, there are none of our European fruits cultivated. Satisfied with a

few

few flowers and pot-herbs, during the ſhort time, they wiſh to reſide in ſo very unhealthy a climate; health is only wanted to make Taverhoff one of the moſt delightful places in the world.

Endemical diſeaſes, the two years I reſided here, did not make their appearance till the beginning of July, at which time, intermittent, remittent, ſlow fevers were very rife, and increaſed till near the end of this month, when they decreaſed till the latter end of Auguſt, and the remittent, ſlow fevers diſappeared: But the regular intermittent fevers were more obſtinate than before this, and fluxes of all kinds accompanied them till the beginning of October, when, as the winter drew on, they diſappeard, and gave place to pleuriſies, peripneumonies and inflammatory diſeaſes of all kinds, which alſo diſappeared when the froſt was continual, and the waters were frozen over. Above, I have only ſpoken of theſe diſeaſes which make their appearances near a fixed time of the year, which I obſerved, and noted down the very dates two years ſucceſſively. I was alſo informed, that they always raged, whether in time of war or peace, much in the ſame way, but proved more obſtinate and fatal to ſtrangers than to inhabitants. In the hot months, malignant, putrid, petechial, eryſipelatous fevers made their appearances in the moſt formidable manner, during the two years I

was

was there: But at the ſame time, I was informed that they neither appeared with ſuch violent rapidity, nor in ſuch numbers in time of peace: Therefore, I do not rank them with the former, but they put on, in the 1739, ſuch horrid appearances that I was uncertain if we were quite free of the plague, as will preſently appear.

In the year 1739, Mr Roſen the ſurgeon of the hoſpital, (Mr Bourman being dead) ſent for me to viſit the hoſpital. At my arrival, he told me a patient was brought from Ikorits with very uncommon ſymptoms, and therefore, he had ſent for me to conſult what was to be done, and how we were to act. This patient, a ſailor, was carried into the ward where malignant putrid fevers were taken care of. He had been ſick the third day, was covered all over with ſmall black *petechiæ*, and his tongue and mouth, as far as we could obſerve, with a thick black fur: his pulſe was ſcarcely ſometimes to be obſerved, at other times very irregular, with a *ſubſultus tendinum*. He had loſt all ſenſes whatſoever; his eyes were inflamed, but appeared rather of a livid than a red colour. He paſſed urine and excrements without any perception. At Ikorits, he had been blooded, vomited, and his back, arms, and legs were bliſtered, of which he had no manner of feeling. As the plague raged with great violence in Pavelofske and the foremen-

tioned village, I ſcrupled not, though I had never ſeen that diſeaſe, to pronounce it to be the plague: The ſick man, and every thing belonging to him, was carried into a little ward, where maniacs had been formerly kept, now vacant: And as the weather was extremely warm and no wind, I ordered the windows of the ſick wards to be kept open through the day, and the floors and bed-cloaths of the ſick to be ſprinkled frequently with vinegar, and alſo morning and evening, and the wards univerſally to be well fumigated with fragrant gums, of which we were allowed great plenty.

As all hopes of recovering the patient from Ikorits were loſt, I adviſed that drink ſhould be frequently given him with antiſeptic medicines, and that he ſhould ke kept as clean as poſſible; and laſtly, that the man appointed to attend him, ſhould have no intercourſe either with the men in the hoſpital, or elſewhere in the city. I prognoſticated that he would ſoon die, and he did ſo that very day. At night, the body was carefully carried out to the deſart, and buried deep in the ground: His bed, bed-cloaths, and every thing elſe belonging to him, were burnt. The people, who were appointed to do this, kept as far on the windy ſide as poſſible, and none were allowed to touch any thing, but the perſon who had waited upon him when living, and they who brought him, were obliged to ſtay

their

their quarantine in the desart, where victuals were regularly carried to them. Three persons were in this manner brought from Ikorits, before instructions and orders could be sent there to prohibit this practice. They had all the same symptoms, were treated much in the same manner, and they all died.

As soon as Mr Rosen and I had taken all the precautions in our power, we went to Captain Russelius, and acquainted him with what we had observed, and what we had done, and hinted to him what we thought ought to be done. The captain was of opinion, that, notwithstanding the Prince at this time was not in good health, he ought to be made acquainted with every thing, because his orders would have a better effect, and would be respected at a greater distance. We accordingly made the Prince acquainted with it, and he immediately caused me get ready instructions, till directions could be procured from the Medicine Chancery, which had forgotten to give me any about the plague. I immediately obeyed, and the Prince from this issued out the following orders.

Mr Russelius immediately dispatched a secret memorial to the governor of Veronits, requiring him to take all care of his province, and sent him a copy of the prince's orders to all immediately under his command, which were, prohibiting all people, under pain of death, to go from Taverhoff to any other city, town,

or

or inhabited place, without liberty from the Prince's Chancery, and likewiſe any people from other places to enter Taverhoff, or its dependencies; and that theſe orders might meet with all obedience without miſtakes, centinels were placed about the city day and night. He required that no fleſh or fiſh ſhould be made uſe of, till further advice; but that, in caſe diſeaſed people were adviſed by any of the faculty to uſe ſuch food, it was recommended that ſuch ſhould uſe either vinegar, lemon-juice, or other acid vegetables, to which they were formerly accuſtomed; that, under pain of a ſevere whipping, the inhabitants ſhould keep their houſes ſweet and clean, open their windows through the whole day, and ſprinkle their floors and bed-cloaths with vinegar; that the poor ſhould get vinegar from the Empreſs's ſtores.

That, if any dead animal was found in the ſtreets, or any where near the houſes, the ſuperintendant ſhould be ſeverely puniſhed; and that, if it could be made appear, that any, after theſe orders were publiſhed, from careleſsneſs, or any other cauſe, did not immediately bury all dead animals, even to the bigneſs of a chicken, deep in the deſart, they ſhould be puniſhed with the Knout! That the prieſts, who always attend burials, ſhould take all care that the graves ſhould be at leaſt ſeven foot deep; that, in every ſtreet, there ſhould be kept day and night, pieces of

fir,

fir, wet ſtraw, with pitch or tar ſmoaking, till further orders. Their times of working, althletick exerciſes, and other diverſions, were alſo regulated.

The ſame orders were ſent to Ikorits, with theſe only differences, that it was ſtrictly ordered they ſhould ſend no ſick to Taverhoff, but form an hoſpital apart to receive ſuch as were infected with theſe ſymptoms accounted dangerous, and that the attendants upon them ſhould have no communication whatſoever with other people, till further orders: That what expreſſes might be ſent to Taverhoff, ſhould be enjoined not to offer to come near any people on the road, nor in the city Taverhoff, but that they ſhould approach the city from that part oppoſite to the wind; and there, from as great diſtance as poſſible, to acquaint the ſoldier on duty with his orders. A writer at ſuch times went, and, in the deſart, on the windy ſide, took a copy of ſuch diſpatches, which were immediately burnt. Laſtly, a line of ſoldiers was formed quite round the people in Ikorits, and high gibbets built on theſe lines, to let ſtrangers and others ſee their danger, if they paſſed them, for the law would inſtantly have been put in execution.

From whatever cauſe, whether from the immediate protection of heaven, or from theſe regulations having been ſtrictly obeyed, I ſhall not diſpute, but certainly I ſaw no more

more of these terrible fevers: Some indeed appeared in Ikorits, but, considering the number of people there, and its vicinity to the before-mentioned infected places, it is truly surprising that we escaped so very well.

From the situation of Taverhoff, its being surrounded with morasses, lakes, large woods, and reeds, with what I have said already about the extraordinary heat and moisture, and the stinking exhalations towards the evenings, from the stagnant waters in the lakes, it will surprise none, ever so little versant in medicine, that the solids of the human body should be rendered very weak, by being, through so many months, as it were stewed, the secretory and excretory faculties perverted, concretions, obstructions, and viscosities in the fluids nourished, and daily increased, digestion much impaired: these I take to be the true causes of the endemical diseases. The method of curing them is, in promoting the evacuations, to perfect regularity, attenuating the viscous humours, and expelling the morbid; and lastly, in corroborating the solids, and for some time thereafter assisting them to recover their natural tone, I imagine is a good proof of the cause.

But there is another undeniable one; which is, that peasants, having no assistance from the physician, who fall into these diseases, and have the good fortune not to die, generally remain sick during the first summer; but when

when winter comes on, and their ſolids are rendered ſtrong by the froſt, the diſeaſe is conquered; and this natural cure, when it happens, is undoubtedly the moſt certain. I ſhall ſay nothing more about the method of curing theſe different diſeaſes, as quite foreign to this deſign, only I can aſſure phyſicians, that neceſſity cauſed us to make trial of monk's rhubarb in place of Chineſe; and, if it be given in a double or even a triple doſe, it comes nothing behind the other in fluxes. Another medicine I can ſcarcely paſs by, which is *vitrum ceratum antimonii*. It has a greater effect upon people almoſt worn out with either a diarrhoea or dyſentery, providing the greater glands of the abdomen are not ulcerated, than it has upon robuſt young men juſt ſeized with this diſeaſe. I have known people, in the opinion of phyſicians of the greateſt experience, paſt all hopes of recovery, effectually, and in a very ſhort time, quite recovered by two or three doſes of this noble medicine, with proper analepticks after its uſe. This digreſſion, tho' ſhort, may be uſeful to ſome, and can hurt none.

CHAP. L.

Concerning various Anecdotes during my two Years Peregrination in and about Taverhoff.

I Remained in the houſe that I got from Capt. Hertzenbergh till May, very much to my ſatisfaction. The Prince had a very numerous family, and, when they got notice that it was determined that the ſuperintendency of the building ſhould be in Taverhoff, the Princeſs arrived there, in the beginning of May, with her children. They were not long there till ſome of them began to fall ſick. The Prince and Princeſs were both of them the beſt of parents, extremely fond of their children, and had the art of bringing them up without any ſevere treatment, in the moſt agreeable manner. His ſons had a governor, and his daughters a governeſs. The ſons ſlept altogether in one large room, each in a ſeparate bed, and their ſiſters in another, with their governeſs, in the ſame manner.

They roſe at ſtated hours in the morning, paid their devotions, were dreſſed, took their meals, went to ſchool and their diverſions, daily. In ſhort, I never knew ſuch a large family ſo well educated, and under an equal œconomy. They had ſeven children, four ſons and three daughters, at the Princeſs's arrival; and

and ſhe was delivered of a fifth ſon in Taverhoff, who was her laſt. This great and antient family is derived from one of the moſt illuſtrious in Poland. Their firſt appearance in Ruſſia, was in the tyrant Ivan Vaſilovitch's time; they were created Dukes of Novogorod Velike, and to this day bear the arms of that province. My Prince and his Princeſs commanded reſpect from the greateſt people, by their eaſy ſweet deportment. I'm certain they had the beſt wiſhes and ſervices I could poſſibly do them, out of pure principle. I never knew a family that in the leaſt could be compared to them.

As I ſaid before, ſome of the Princeſs's children fell ſick ſoon after her arrival; and, it ſeems, the Prince had loſt 15 ſervants by ſickneſs laſt year, which frightened them much. They therefore deſired that I would live with the adjutant, telling me, that, in that caſe, I ſhould have nothing to provide, either for myſelf, ſervant, or horſe. I could deny them nothing, and therefore acquieſced, notwithſtanding I foreſaw, that ſome difference might happen betwixt the adjutant and me; nor was I miſtaken; for, one day, when he and I were both abſent, the lock of my deſk was picked, and 30 crowns taken away. My ſervant was with me; and, as I had driven to Veronits, I needed pocket-money, and took ſome out in the morning, when my caſh was ſafe. At my return, I put up what I had in my

pocket, and thus made the discovery. In order to deceive me, he (the adjutant's servant) had not taken all. He being present, I censured him for it; he denied, and returned reproachful answers, which obliged me to beat him. This certainly was wrong: His master took it highly amiss, notwithstanding I acknowledged my error to him. He not only did not forgive this rashness caused by provocation, but took the rogue's part so far, as to give me names, which I retorted, and indeed scarcely could refrain myself from striking him. This he wanted much, but I retired. At my return, I learned, that he had complained to the Prince, requiring that a court-martial should determine our dispute, alledging, that I had challenged him. The Prince made enquiry; I told him as above, and said, that I had not challenged him, but only contended that he durst not give me such language at a distance from witnesses: I said, I knew he scarcely had a soul a degree above a sheep's; and therefore it would have been a sign of great folly in me to challenge such a milk-sop as he. I desired the Prince to let the court-martial proceed, demonstrating, that, as he was the first aggressor, and had learned me to use such words, the signification of some of them I was ignorant of, I certainly should be justified, and recover the money his servant had stolen from me.

That

That the Empreſs had 350,000 good ſoldiers, each of which ſhe could make an officer every jot as good as Balotnicoff; but that it would prove a little difficult to create one of my profeſſion out of them all. I ſaid a great deal more; to all which, the Prince deſired that I would for this once put it up. I yielded, and immediately Balotnicoff was ſent for, and commanded that he ſhould never dare to give me the ſmalleſt provocation after this, under the penalty of being inſtantly ſent to Aſoph, which was very near as horrible to him as hell itſelf. Thus ended this diſpute, nor had I any other in Taverhoff, with this advantage to me, that I got an agreeable apartment in the palace; the Prince made up my loſs, and the Princeſs ever after, until I was married, was my caſh-keeper.

The above-mentioned diſeaſe ran like wild fire through this moſt noble family; but, to my great ſatisfaction, not one of them died. However, in the year 1739, the good Prince was at once affected with a fever and bloody flux. As I never loved man equal to him, my conſtant attendance, without ſleep for nine days and nights, except in an elbow-chair at his bed-ſide for half an hour at a time, had almoſt deprived me both of my appetite and ſtrength. My old friend Dr Miniatty, an acquaintance of the Prince's, came in his way from the Ukraine to Veronits; I therefore begged of him that he would attend the Prince,

till

till I ſhould get a ſleep in my bed; but when I had only laid myſelf down a very ſhort time, I was ſeized with the *incubus*, a diſeaſe I never had experienced before. I attempted thrice to get reſt, and thrice I was attacked with this dreadful diſeaſe, which put ſleep quite from me. I then put on my cloaths, told what had happened, and let the doctor paſs on to Veronits.

In a few days thereafter, the Prince grew ſomewhat better, but recovered very ſlowly; and, after he was quite free of this flux and fever, he was threatened with a dropſy. There were few parts of his body free of what is called *anaſarca*, but his legs were worſe, attended with ſuch coldneſs, that it was almoſt impoſſible to make him ſenſible of heat. It took my greateſt ſkill to recover him during the length of the ſummer; but at laſt it was ſo ſucceſsfully accompliſhed, that I'm told he only died at St Petersburgh laſt year, betwixt 80 and 90 years old, full of honour, which he truly deſerved: He was then lord high admiral, ſenator, privy-counſellor, and knight of the order of St Andrew, the firſt Ruſſian order.

Before I leave this ſubject, I ſhall give one inſtance of the Prince's juſtice: When he was in ſuch an uncertain ſtate of health, and as I did every thing in my power for his recovery, I adviſed him, among other things, to go to a pleaſant village about two miles diſtant from Taverhoff, called Shilofke, ſitu-

ated

ated on the top of a high dry ground, and a mile at leaſt from any woods, except thoſe in the moraſs betwixt Taverhoff and it, whence the vapours ſeldom or never aſcended ſo high; and was well watered with a fountain of ſpring water, as clear as chryſtal.

One day as I waited on the Prince, I ſaw in the entry a very well behaved man, genteelly dreſſed. He was the more remarkable, as he had on a ſuit of ſuperfine cloaths in the Engliſh faſhion. The next time I waited upon the Prince, this man was ſitting at the door upon a heavy clog of wood, to which he was chained by the neck. As the Prince was ſo far from hindering me to make inquiry, that he took all opportunities of encouraging me, I heſitated not to aſk him the reaſon of treating a man ſo ignominiouſly. He ſaid, that the late Field-marſhal Prince Golitzin had made a preſent of him, when about nine years of age, to my Prince: That, as he eſteemed the memory of his brother, he had ſpared no expence in making him maſter of writing and arithmetick; and that, as he was a Crim Tartar by birth, he had him baptiſed, and married to a very pretty, modeſt, young woman, by whom he had a numerous family. As he had done ſo much for him, he appointed him his factor over many villages, and that he had behaved very well till the Prince was ſent from Peterſburgh, when he imagined himſelf at liberty to act as he pleaſed, poſſibly expecting

pecting that the Empreſs would take the villages from the Prince: That a petition was ſent to him ſome time ago, acquainting him, that this fellow had abſolutely ruined ſome hundreds of people, and that, upon a fair inquiry, he found it was true: That by the laws of the country, he ſhould be hanged, or, at leaſt, ſent to the galleys for life; but that he would puniſh him in this manner. He ſaid, that he had already appointed another factor, with orders to take every thing from this villain, and make reſtitution to the peaſants as far as was poſſible.

He alſo had ordered a certain maintenance for his wife and children, with orders to have the children carefully educated; but this fellow ſhould undergo a ſevere whipping, and then to be ſent to the villages, to write under the new factor, to whom orders were given to let no fault go unpuniſhed; and laſtly, that if it was found out that he had not made a clear diſcovery of all the value he had, he would be ſent to the galleys for life; whereas, if he had made a clear diſcovery, he ſhould remain in the village; and, if he behaved well for the future, he had a chance of being again promoted, and freed from his chains.

CHAP.

CHAP. LI.

A Continuation of what happened remarkable in Taverhoff, early in the Summer 1748.

AN old acquaintance Mr Rosen, a surgeon, designed for Asoph, arrived in Taverhoff. Mr Burman was unable to perform his duty in the hospital, and so very weak, that we could have no hopes of his living much longer. Mr Rosen and I had lived in great friendship. He used to interpret for me in the hospital at Petersburgh, as he spoke Latin well, consequently no wonder I was glad to see him; I therefore, finding it not disagreeable to Mr Rosen, projected a scheme of getting him kept at Taverhoff. I applied to the Prince, representing the dangerous state of Mr Burman's health, and the impossibility of my attending the business of the hospital daily, and that of his great command, at the same time, only with the assistance of two mates. This had the desired effect, and Mr Rosen was appointed to attend the hospital, and this was soon confirmed by orders from the medicine-chancery and admiralty. It may appear scarcely credible, but it is nevertheless true, that I was greatly at a loss to speak Latin with Mr Rosen at our first meeting, frequently interlarding with it either Russian or German words.

words. After I had got an apartment in the palace, where the writers were employed daily, I applied myſelf to learn to read and write the Ruſſian language, and it was altogether owing to this, that I was before ſo confuſed. I knew one Peter Miln, who had been nine years keeping the books for Mr Dimideof, belonging to his great iron-works in Siberia, and who, at his return to St Peterſburgh, could not ſpeak Engliſh.

Mrs Luggar, a lieutenant's widow, arrived in Taverhoff from Aſoph, in the latter end of Auguſt 1738, in her way to St Peterſburgh. Some days paſſed before I could ſpeak Engliſh promptly, and without confounding it with other languages. At Aſoph ſhe had petitioned Admiral Bredal to pay her widow-money, which that baſe man denied, and ſhe was in ſome diſtreſs. She was old, but inſiſted that ſhe was marriageable, and capable of bearing children. I ſuppoſe ſhe inſiſted upon this, that ſhe might at once get a complete year's ſalary, viz. the ſum of 290 rubles. I begged of her rather to acknowledge that ſhe was ſuperannuated, that ſhe might get her widow-money paid yearly, which (as ſhe had no thoughts of returning to England) would be a certainty as long as ſhe lived, and great abundance in ſuch a cheap country as this; but ſhe inſiſted to have the large ſum at once, for the before-mentioned reaſons, and three years after that, I ſaw her in St Peterſburgh

married

married a ſecond time. In ſhort, I uſed all my intereſt with the Prince, and ſucceeded in getting her money, and, at her deſire, bought her a very convenient houſe, and did every other thing in my power to ſerve her; ſo glad was I of having one in the place with whom I could ſpeak my native language.

This old woman had a daughter married in the neighbourhood to an officer. She alſo arrived in November to ſee her mother, and acquainted us, not without ſatisfaction, that her huſband, a Ruſſian, was dead, by whoſe death ſhe had acquired a third of his eſtate, which was not great. It ſeems he had uſed her with great ſeverity, but I ſuſpect that there were faults on both ſides. Mr Roſen made his addreſſes to her. As we ever lived in good friendſhip, he firſt made his propoſals to me, and deſired my aſſiſtance, providing I was not engaged with her. I aſſured him, I was already verbally engaged to another in St Peterſburgh, and, unleſs ſhe married in my abſence, I did not think myſelf at liberty to make ſuit to any other perſon. I declined giving him any counſel in an affair of ſuch conſequence; but, at the ſame time, offered my ready ſervice to aſſiſt him, if he was fully reſolved. He ſaid he was; wherefore I aſſiſted, and the marriage was ſoon conſummated to the ſatisfaction of both parties.

In the beginning of the winter 1739, an accident happened at Veronits, which alarmed

the inhabitants of that city and all their neighbours, the mentioning of which, I doubt not, will be agreeable to the reader, because it lets us see what mischief may be produced from ignorance, or a mistake in time of the plague. A woman arrived in Veronits from some distance, but from a healthy place well attested. As she had come from a distance, she desired to use the bagnio, very customary among the Russians after much fatigue. After she had washed herself, and taken a plentiful supper, she slept in the hot-house. Next morning she was found dead! The landlord was obliged to acquaint the governor, before he durst bury her. The governor had sent off his only garrison-surgeon, some time before this, to assist the inhabitants of Pavelofske; consequently he had none to direct him in this affair. The field-apothecary lived in Veronits, to be near the army, and prepare medicines for all people in the service, in that neighbourhood. He had formerly been afflicted with the plague, and his wife had died of this disease the third time she was seized with it; which may be sufficient to undeceive those who imagine that the plague, like the small pox, afflict persons only once in their lives.

The governor having no other belonging to the medical affair, ordered the apothecary to visit the dead body, and report whatever was observable, and what was his opinion. He

He did ſo, and reported that ſhe had died of the plague, becauſe ſhe had a great buboe in one of her groins. Upon this the governor cauſed ſhut the city, and declare it unclean, denying any intercourſe between the inhabitants and thoſe of other parts: At the ſame time, he ſent an expreſs to Taverhoff, to acquaint the Prince of the misfortunate condition of the inhabitants of Veronits, requiring the aſſiſtance of a ſurgeon from thence. In return, the Prince expreſſed his ſorrow for their misfortune, but would not allow any of his medical people to go to their aſſiſtance, becauſe he was uncertain how ſoon we might be in the ſame condition, adviſing him to ſend for proper aſſiſtance to Moſcow, and diſcharging him to ſend any more to Taverhoff. It happened that ſame day in the evening, that two ſurgeon's mates, in their way from Moſcow to the army, demanded admittance into the city, which the ſoldier upon duty denied, acquainting them of their miſerable condition.

The mates intended to have gone round the city to the next village, for freſh horſes, rejoicing that they could ſo eaſily eſcape ſuch danger; but an officer was upon duty, and being informed what they were, demanded that they ſhould wait at the gate till the governor was made acquainted; telling them, that they probably would be obliged to return, if they went further. The governor was very

glad

glad to converſe with ſuch people, demanded their immediate attendance in his houſe; and acquainted them with what he knew, had done, and what he dreaded. They ſaid, that they never had ſeen that diſeaſe, but acknowledged that they had read about it, and that they alſo had heard ſeveral lectures by Dr Blumentroſe, phyſician, by the Great Hoſpital in Moſcow, concerning it, and the various methods of cure. In ſhort, the governor deſired them to take their repoſe, and next morning cauſe the body be taken out of the grave, inſpect it very carefully, and make an accurate report of whatever they might diſcover. They did ſo; found the buboe; but, making a ſtricter ſearch than the apothecary had done, found out other ſymptoms, which determined them to report that the woman had not the ſmalleſt ſign of the plague, but that the buboe and ſome other ſymptoms were venereal, and that the woman had been ſuffocated in the bagnio, an event which is not alarming, and which frequently happens in Ruſſia, from the careleſsneſs of the people who heat it, and cloſe it up before the coals are thoroughly burnt to charcoal. They alſo obſerved, that the buboe was completely ſuppurated, a circumſtance which could not have happened, if ſhe had been infected with the plague, eſpecially as they had opened the buboe, and declared it was full of well concocted matter.

This

This their report gave universal joy to the city and the adjacent country; but the poor apothecary was much and justly exposed, for his ignorance and presumption.

CHAP. LII.

A Continuation of the same Subject.

FOUR officers had been appointed by Admiral Bredal to superintend the works at Ikorits, before Prince Golitzin arrived; three of them were Russians, and the other a German. It seems the Russians had let from the work, under pretence of sickness, *&c.* the peasants, who were sent from different provinces to assist in getting vessels ready for the use of the army. They had taken money from each peasant, to the value of some rubles, in order to let them go home. This undoubtedly was a very great crime in Russia, where no perquisites whatever are allowed, except their salary, servants, provision, rations, and forage, according to their ranks. By the articles of war, crimes of this nature are punishable by death.

The German had, as he told me, taken only two or three men to assist in making a coach for him: These were their crimes. Admiral Bredal, an excessively proud man, having been made acquainted with these affairs,

sent

ſent for them, and, I was aſſured, deſigned only to chide them: He did ſo; but one named Chiricoff, a lieutenant, a very rich man, and every whit as proud as his commander, could not bear the admiral's taunts: He very unſeaſonably retorted with a great deal of virulence: The conſequence was, that Chiricoff was arreſted, and a court-martial conveened to judge of this affair. He was found guilty, and, not willing to ſuffer alone, he accuſed the others, who were alſo found guilty. Sentence of death was paſſed upon them all. They had remained under arreſt, upon half pay, three years, and doubted not but they would get a pardon, as Chiricoff was of an honourable family, and had great alliances: But they could not agree among themſelves; and, as they only ſaw one another at church, they were fooliſh enough to ſcold there. Captain Ruſſelius was importuned by the prieſts to repreſent this, which he could not deny. He not only repreſented it, but alſo begged that the admiralty would either order them to Peterſburgh, or free him from any accuſation which might be brought againſt him for not keeping better order, which he affirmed was not in his power. In anſwer to this, the ultimate ſentence was ſent, confirmed by the Empreſs, commanding that they, without loſs of time, ſhould be brought to the parade, and there have their ſwords broken over their heads by the hands of the hangman,

hangman, and be declared infamous; that they ſhould be ſhackled, and ſent, under a guard to Oranburgh, to the galleys for life; and laſtly, that all their eſtates and other riches ſhould be forfeited to the Empreſs. This ſentence was ſoon put in execution; but, by the humanity of the captain, not with the greateſt rigour, for horſes, carriages, cloaths, and many other things, were let go for the uſe of their wives and relations. At the ſame time, ſome writers, who have no rank in the army, were ſeverely whipt and ſent to the galleys, becauſe they knew, and did not diſcover, the villainy of the officers.

At this time alſo an affair happened, which put me in a great fright, and was the cauſe of laughter to the Prince and others. The archbiſhop of Veronits was taken ill of a fever, wrote to the Prince, and begged that he would ſend me to give the apothecary directions how to cure him. I had been bad for a long time of a tertian ague and bloody flux, which, though ſomething better, had reduced my ſtrength very much. The Prince came into my room, told me of the archbiſhop's ſickneſs and deſire, but at the ſame time ſaid, that, though ſcarcely any thing could give him greater pleaſure than to be obliging to the biſhop, yet he would not deſire me to go, unleſs I thought I could do it with ſafety. Not being able to deny that good man any thing, I conſented, and ſent to Mr Chiricoff

for

for the loan of his large fur-coat, to defend me from the cold. It was at my return from Veronits, that I heard the ſentence was to be put in execution next day. I was much afraid, when I was told that every thing was to be taken from them, that my having borrowed his furred coat, might have been interpreted much to my diſadvantage, eſpecially as it was very coſtly, the fur alone being ſable; therefore, without loſs of time, I ſent it to his houſe, and then expreſſed my fears to the ſecretary, who laughed at me, as did every one who heard of it, ſaying, that if I had kept it, tho' all the courts in Peterſburgh had known, it would not have been looked upon as any way criminal, as I had got it before the ſentence was publicly declared: However, the ſatisfaction I had in the quietneſs and peace of my mind, was, I think to this day, much preferable to it, if it had been of far greater value.

When the Prince ſtaid at Shiloffke, I uſed, after I had viſited my patients, frequently to divert myſelf with my fowling-piece upon the banks of the rivers Don and Veronits: One day I came up to a man who was fiſhing, and, aſking him what ſport he had got, and talking with him, I underſtood that he was blind, had loſt his right leg and thigh, and his left foot; being a poor young peaſant, I gave him ſome money, and deſired that he would give me an account of the cauſe and cure. He ſaid, that

that ſome years ago he was taken ill of a violent fever, that theſe members already named had dropt from him; laſtly, that he at the ſame time had loſt his ſight, but that God was his only doctor. He ſaid the neighbours had kept him clean, and had applied to the ulcerated parts only the leaves of green kail, or bur-dock, made ſoft before the fire: That, after he had recovered his health, he got a ſmall boat, and uſed to go to fiſh with his neighbours; but that now, he was ſo well acquainted with the banks of the Veronits, that he frequently went ſome miles from the village, and was the principal fiſher in it, by which he had got a very good livelihood; as for riches, he deſpiſed them. I mention this to let people ſee that nature, when left to herſelf, ſometimes makes incredible cures; and I imagine it may be of uſe to intelligent honeſt ſurgeons, to be very careful how and when they perform operations; for, in the courſe of my practice, I have known people loſt by ignorant daring ſurgeons.

I ſhall give an inſtance of nature's having performed a cure, when the patient would have been loſt if another method had been taken, and this may be of uſe to all my readers. It was this: A ſailor was brought to the hoſpital. He was very feveriſh, an *eryſipelas* had ſpread over the ſkin of the *penis* and *ſcrotum*, as far as the *os pubis*. Every thing was done, which art hitherto recommends, to

no purpose. Mr Rosen and I called for the advice of Mr Frish at Veronits, a gentleman who had successfully performed many operations; the more dangerous, the readier he was to perform; consequently he gave his advice immediately to amputate all the affected parts, to which I made the following objections: 1*mo*, That the *erysipelas* had spread above the *os pubis*, and how deep it went, none could possibly say. 2*do*, That his fever was extremely high, and consequently none could justly say how far the whole mass of blood was contaminated with the erysipelatous cause; and that daily experience shewed, that in such diseases a wound inflicted upon a sound part generally translated the *erysipelas* to the wounded part, and sometimes left the former diseased part altogether. This could not be denied, because we frequently found the *erysipelas* next day affecting strongly the member which had been bled. But lastly, a ring, of a brown colour, run quite round, and circumscribed the *erysipelas* from the sound skin, which I took to be a sure sign of a separation; and consequently, that, if nature's intention was now interrupted, it would undoubtedly cause the man's death. Mr Frish was of a different opinion, and was base enough, privately, to asperse my character, by saying, that if the man should lose his life, it was owing to my obstinacy. I soon got notice of this.

And

And having been warned, I doubled my diligence, and had the ſatisfaction to complete the cure. The ſkin of the *penis* and *ſcrotum* were quite loſt, yet nature ſurrounded the teſticles and *penis* with a calloſity to admiration; and, though the teſticles were ſtrained, yet he was completely cured, and begot children, which I prognoſticated to his wife, when ſhe uſed to viſit him.

The conſequence of this cure was to me very agreeable. Mr Friſh, underſtanding that I was for ſatisfaction, came to the hoſpital when I was there, and, before many of our officers, begged pardon, and acknowledged that he did not think that he was cureable, and believed that the operation was the only cure; but now was convinced of the contrary. Be that as it may, Mr Friſh certainly ſuffered much in his reputation, though not undeſervedly.

It was in Auguſt when we arrived in the pleaſant village Shiloſske, and conſequently very hot weather; the ſoil is dry, rather inclining to ſandy. It was towards the evening when we arrived, and I arrived in my travelling-waggon, where I ſlept the firſt night, or rather deſigned to take my reſt, for my eyes were not ſhut one hour the whole night, occaſioned by an innumerable quantity of fleas, which forced me at laſt, with others, to get up and walk about, among whom was the Prince's eldeſt ſon Prince Alexander, the

the ſame who was lately ambaſſador at the Court of London. We were aſſured that the deſart, every ſummer, was in the ſame condition; but that where many people lodged together, or encamped, their numbers very ſoon decreaſed, and we found this to prove true at Shilofske.

We again returned to Taverhoff in the latter end of September, the good Prince having recovered, to the unfeigned joy of his own family, and all the good people who had the happineſs to be aquainted with him. He reaſſumed his command, which was like to have run into confuſion, when he was ſick.

A gentleman of the name of Iſmaeloff, of an antient family and great poſſeſſions, was ſent to Taverhoff, it was ſaid, by the deſire of his relations. He was but weak and vain, a great lover of game, and conſequently every villain could make a bait for him: He was good natured, and therefore not dangerous. He was a relation to the Prince, and his Lady a near relation to the Princeſs royal Eliſabeth, afterwards Empreſs of Ruſſia. This gentleman kept a large pack of hounds, many grey-hounds, and other kinds of dogs. He was only a lieutenant, but the Prince appointed under him proper mid-ſhip-men, who tranſacted the affairs of the Empire without blemiſh. Mr Iſmaeloff rejoiced in nothing ſo much as obliging every one as far as he could. He hunted frequently, and, not only

only made every one welcome to partake of that diverſion, but regaled them ſumptuouſly, and looked upon them as his friends. When the weather would not permit of hunting, we might ever meet with ſome agreeable diverſion in Mr Iſmaeloff's houſe, providing only that it happened to be none of his drinking days, which were very frequent. Every pleaſant ſummer-day, we either went a-hunting, fiſhing, fowling, or playing, and drinking our tea at the ſide of a wood, or on the banks of a river, in the afternoons only; and in this manner I paſſed two years, as it were in paradiſe, except only when I was ſick. The good Prince never failed to honour us with his preſence, when affairs permitted, and when he could not, the Princeſs and a coachful or two of his children were partners of our innocent diverſions.

There are many wolves and bears about Taverhoff, and the inhabitants have different ways of catching them; as a relation of this kind may be agreeable to ſome of my readers, take what follows. The bear is killed with a piece of ſharp ſteel fixed on the end of a ſhort ſtrong pole, and a club armed with a heavy piece of iron: When they have rouſed the bear, he makes a briſk attack, inſtantly the peaſant gets on his knee, and fixes his pole on the ground, keeping the ſharp ſteel pointed to the bear, who, not obſerving, or elſe little afraid of the pole, ruſhes on to the man, who

directs

directs the steel so, as to pierce his breast, and then with one blow of his armed club on the head, dispatches him at once. I have been told that they are so fond of bear-hunting, that, though it is attended with great danger, they very carefully will go to kill them, without acquainting any of their neighbours. Another way is with strong nets in the woods, and the musquet. A third way is more curious, and not dangerous: They take a large door, into which they drive many pieces of iron made very sharp, and standing some inches above the wood, into the middle of this they fix a living pig, which squeaks the whole night, then they cover all over with grass or reeds. When the bear hears the pig, he makes all the haste he can to seize his prey; but when he jumps on the door, the sharp irons, being bearded, run into his feet, then he turns himself on his back, and continues to roll and roar with the door above him, till the hunter next morning dispatches him. There are many fierce wolves about Taverhoff in the winter season, which they kill, by tying a living pig to the end of a sledge with a long rope; two men sit in the sledge well armed with guns loaded with slug-shot. They drive their horse by some wood, and then throw out the pig which makes a loud noise, at which the wolves come out, and, endeavouring to seize their prey, are dispatched with the fowling-pieces, but the shot renders the fur of small

value

value. Two accidents happened when I was in Taverhoff, which deſerve to be mentioned.

An old ſailor uſed to get a dead horſe, or a piece of one, and carry it to the deſart, into the middle of which he fixed a ſtick; he then planted two or three loaded guns, pointed to the ſtick, in ſuch a manner, that if any thing moved the horſe, the motion, by the help of ſmall cords, drew the triggers. One morning, as the ſailor went to ſee what kind of game he had got, he ſpied from a diſtance ſomething very bulky, and, though it was froſt, when the boars don't roam abroad, yet he imagined it could be nothing elſe. Gladly he run to the part, but ſoon was undeceived. It was a man who had loſt his way, having been the worſe of drink, and ſeeing ſomething black among the ſnow, went and ſat down to take a reſt, where he was wounded by nine ſlugs. The poor man was cured, but the ſailor, after a long confinement, was diſcharged ſuch diverſion ever after. Two ſoldiers belonging to the garriſon of Veronits, lovers of ſport, went one night, according to cuſtom, to ſome hay-ricks with a pig; an old large cunning wolf appeared, but did not run ſtraight to the pig; after running about them ſome time, he jumped upon the head of one of the ſoldiers, and very ſoon would have devoured him, had not the other, who was very near him, ſhot him dead, which he did without wounding the man.

If

If a man has only a few houſes of his own, though he may be ever ſo rich, he, (not as here) dare not aſſume the title of gentleman; he is only a peaſant of the better ſort, and called odna dvorctz, which ſignifies in Engliſh, one houſe. One of theſe peaſants lived in the neighbourhood of Taverhoff, he was extremely obliging: One winter-day, he begged of the Prince to permit his children to go and ſee his method of fiſhing, which was granted, and I made one of the party. After we had got a homely repaſt in his houſe, we went to a pleaſant lake about three miles long, but not half a mile broad, where we frequently uſed to divert ourſelves in the ſummer ſeaſon, by fiſhing, ſhooting, gathering ſtrawberries and different kinds of fruit growing on the banks, and this odna dvorctz ſupplied us with cream in abundance. Thither we went with a light, and well armed, for fear of wolves; the peaſant cut a circular hole through the ice, and, cauſing the light to be held near it, with a net in the form of a large laddle, he took as many fiſh as he pleaſed, ſuch as perches, pike, tench, and carp. In ſhort, he loaded two ſledges in leſs than an hour. This relation may ſurpriſe ſome at firſt reading, but the fact is ſo well known, that, in Ruſſia, the peaſants have no readier way of catching fiſh for their uſe; and they ſay, which is moſt reaſonable, that the fiſh

ſwim

ſwim from afar to the hole, directed by the light, for the benefit of freſh air.

After this manner we lived in Taverhoff, till the middle of October, when orders arrived to the Prince, acquainting him of the peace, and commanding him to cauſe lay up all ſtores, and veſſels already built, or near finiſhed, under ſhades, to appoint proper officers to take notice of every thing left; finally to diſmiſs his command, make his repair to St Peterſburgh, and take a ſeat in the ſenate and admiralty. This was agreeable news to us all. I looked upon Peterſburgh, as I would have done upon London; and now all people were employed to get every thing ended: But the Prince never would leave any thing half done, which cauſed us to remain in Taverhoff till February 1740, when we were thinking to ſet out in two or three days for St Peterſburgh. One morning I went into the Princeſs's chamber, and was not a little ſurpriſed to ſee her weeping, and in ſo much ſorrow that ſhe could not ſpeak one word. I had not been there three minutes, till the Prince entered, dreſſed only in his morning gown; and, pointing to the Princeſs, ſmiled, tho' he was alſo grieved, and ſaid, obſerve Fatiana, for that was the Princeſs's name, how ſhe grieves for what can not be helped, ſince it is agreeable to God and the government.

He ſaid, that about midnight a courier arrived, with orders for him to make his repair

to Aſtrachan, and govern that kingdom till further orders; he then threw his gown about me, and ſaid, it grieved him moſt that he was obliged to ſend me to St Peterſburgh, and eſpecially at this time, when three of his children were ſick, and the Princeſs not well recovered from the effects of a petechial fever, ſhe had near loſt her life by. To which I anſwered, that, if I ſhould not be reckoned a deſerter, I would go with him and his family to any part upon earth; but that I would deſire to be ſent from Aſtrachan to St Petersburgh when he arrived, by which means neither the admiralty nor medicine chancery could blame me; becauſe, as we were to proceed very faſt, I could return by poſt, as ſoon as I was obliged by the eamſhicks, or ordinary way of marching, which is at the rate of 50 verſts in three days, agreeable to Peter the Great's regulations.

My ready anſwer gave them both great ſatisfaction. Econtra his adjutant, whom he had, from a maker of barrels, made an officer, denied to go further than Pavelofske; but the Prince eaſed him of that trouble, and not only excuſed him, but granted liberty and time enough to go and ſpend ſome days with his relations, before he ſhould arrive in St Petersburgh.

We loſt no time in getting every thing ready, and left Taverhoff on the 10th of February 1748, and next morning reached to Novopavelofske,

vopavelofske, where there are ſome thouſands of men conſtantly employed in making and repairing ſmall arms for the army. An accident happened here, which I ſhall very briefly relate.

The commandant, who was only a major, came to pay his reſpects to the Prince, and demanded his orders. I was walking in the lobby till breakfaſt was ready; my furred coat, and the reſt of my dreſs, were the ſame as that of the Prince's ſons; for every year I got from the Princeſs two complete ſuits of cloaths, one for the winter and the other for ſummer. He came up to me, and aſked, if the Prince was to be ſeen? I ſaid he was, and ſhewed him the door: He then in a moſt ſubmiſſive manner aſked me, What my rank in the army was? I told him: He then in a moſt deſpiteful manner ſaid, Is that all! and moved off. As there were none preſent, I heſitated not to acquaint him, that he certainly was a muſhroom ſprung from froth. He went into the room however, without returning any anſwer; from this I was certain, that he either was no gentleman, or if he was, he had had none of the genteel education which the Ruſſians beſtow upon their children with ſuch care. I was not miſtaken. A ſervant warned me to go to breakfaſt; when I entered the room, the Prince was ſitting taking a diſh of coffee, at ſome diſtance from the table: My commandant was ſtanding at the

door,

door, a ſure ſign that he was no gentleman: The Princeſs and her children were ſitting at the table. When I had ſhut the door, I made a very low bow to my major, and begged to know his rank; at which the noble family all ſtared, well knowing it was not my cuſtom to be impertinently inquiſitive to ſtrangers. The major, not a little diſconcerted, anſwered pitifully enough, that he was a major and commandant of the city; to which I replied, *Is that all?* it is undoubtedly for want of a better, turned round with an air of importance, and took my place at the table. The whole family were greatly embarraſſed to keep from laughter; but they were ſoon freed of all reſtraint, for I only began to tell what paſſed in the lobby, when my major made a low bow, and ſuddenly departed; but before he left the houſe, he muſt have heard a very hearty laugh, and, no doubt, he knew it was at his expence. I never could put up with vain, empty, ſelf-ſufficient fools, but continually took all opportunities to humble them.

The Prince ſaid, that he was a gentleman, but that their family was ſcarcely known, and therefore remained in a ſtate of old ignorance; and that he believed this major was the greateſt military rank belonging to his family. Thus we travelled on, night and day briſkly, through the ſame villages I mentioned in my journey to Kotchatoff, till we arrived upon the line which reacheth from the Don to the

river

river Volga. Before I deſcribe this line, I muſt mention two little accidents, which happened to me betwixt Pavelofske and the line.

The firſt was, the Princeſs ſometimes deſired that I ſhould ſit upon the forepart of the ſledge in which ſhe and the Prince were, in order to paſs the time. When we had left Pavelofske, I went into a very large ſledge to viſit two of the ſick children; it was very warm; and, whilſt I was talking with them and the nurſes, the ſledge went off; they adviſed me to ſit ſtill, to which I had no objection; accordingly we proceeded to the next village, without the ſmalleſt accident: But, when I came to the Prince and Princeſs, they ſeemed to be ſurpriſed, telling me, that they thought I had been loſt, as none knew where I was. The Prince had on the way diſpatched back an expreſs to Novopavelofske, to ſee what was become of me; but they ſaid it was a good ſcheme to go into the ſick-ſledge.

One fine froſty day we arrived in a village ſituated high on the banks of the Don. As we were to ſtay a few hours here, the ſervants and other idle people poured water on the ſide of the hill, which inſtantly froze like glaſs; they then, men and women, upon the bark of trees, ſlided down the hill. This is a diverſion which the Ruſſians are very fond of; the Princeſs went out to ſee it, and I accompanied her. After we had looked on a while, ſhe deſired that I would try it alone, for ſome

times

times three, or even four, can either ſit or ſtand on the bark, but then they are often overſet, and this occaſions laughter, eſpecially among the women, when what they commonly take great pains to hide, is expoſed to public view.

They were ſo fond of the diverſion, that, the winter I was employed in the hoſpitals in St Peterſburgh, I was informed the Empreſs Ann cauſed make a hill of ſnow for it; and that Prince Courakin, the ſame who was ſome time envoy at the Court of Great Britain, who at that time was maſter of horſe, and uſed to take great liberties in order to divert the Empreſs: He frequently ſat upon a ſmall ſledge, and took ſome of the ladies upon his knee; but when the velocity of the ſledge, at the foot of the hill, was ſo diminiſhed as not to endanger hurting the ladies, he then fell off with his fair partner, to the mirth of the byſtanders; but the ladies were dreſſed in long linen drawers, ſo that their modeſty was not hurt. At the Princeſs's deſire, I ſat down on the middle of a large piece of bark; and, as I was not acquainted with ſuch exerciſes, I through ignorance placed my legs alſo upon the bark: Thus equipped, I was gently puſhed off, and, though I did not fall off, the bark turned ſo frequently round, that it exhibited to the ſkilful ſpectators much mirth. At laſt, my bark being very ſmooth, and I unſkilful, not able to direct it, carried me forward into

a pit,

a pit, from whence the people uſed to fetch water. This unforeſeen accident ſoon turned their mirth into the other extreme. I however went down unhurt, and it being all frozen over, except a ſmall hole, I was in no danger; therefore, conſidering how merry they had been at my expence, in my turn I had the ſatisfaction to divert myſelf at their fright; I lay ſtill, not viſible by them, and obſerved many, in their hurry, to help me, lying on the ſide of the hill, overturned in ſo many different ſhapes, that, at another time, it would have exhibited a ſcene of laughter to all ſpectators. At laſt, when they came near me, I aroſe, and left my vehicle for them to carry back at my return. The Princeſs ſaid, ſhe never would again deſire me to make proof of my readineſs to oblige her at ſuch a riſk, which indeed ſhe was ignorant of.

We at laſt arrived on the weſt end of this much famed line, which runs betwixt the rivers Don and Volga, a work of the great Peter's, fit only for ſuch a Prince to have made. It is a ditch and rampart reaching the whole length of 60 verſts; the ditch is 20 yards broad, well formed, and proportionably deep. The rampart is very high, and the ſouth ſide, towards the Kalmucks (commonly called Calmuks in other authors) country, or the deſart of Aſtrachan, is planted with high and ſtrong palliſadoes made of fir-trees, drove into the ground, and faſtened together with croſs-

beams,

beams, ſo cloſe, that a man cannot get thro' any where, except, I think, at two places, through which brooks of water run, and theſe are fortified as far as art hath hitherto been able. There are four ſtrong forts built upon this line at equal diſtances, well ſtored with cannon, and betwixt the forts are many houſes, where ſoldiers only live. Centinel-boxes are placed on the top of the wall, the whole length, ſo near one another, that the ſoldiers on duty can almoſt ſpeak together. The names of the forts from the weſt end to the eaſt, are called in the ſame order, viz. Donſkaja, Oſokor, Graczi, Meczotnaja, and Tſaritzin, in other authors falſely called Carizyn.

The deſign of building this line, is to reſtrain the incurſions of the Kalmucks into the Empire of Ruſſia, and, although it has the effect of curbing great bodies, yet ſmall parties have made their way thro' where the brooks run, and done very conſiderable damage, as will be taken notice of in courſe of my travels. We reached that caſtle called Oſokor, about ſeven at night, and as the horſes were very tired, and no change to be got here, we were obliged to take our lodging in the caſtle. Except the captain's apartment, who was commandant of the caſtle, there was no other private clean room in it; this being deſtined for the Prince and his family, I could get none, unleſs I would ſleep in the guard-room, which was very large, but as full of men as it could

ſtow,

ſtow, and I imagine this was the coldeſt night I had ever experienced in my life. I ſtaid in the Prince's apartment till bed-time, and as it was exceſſively cold after ſupper, I took a little more wine than I uſed to do, to comfort me, but notwithſtanding all my care, when I went to the door, it was intolerable. I then returned into the guard-room; but though it was warm enough, when I viewed the number of people of all ſorts, I by no means thought of making one of their company: I therefore ordered my ſervant to get ready two bottles of boiling water to be put to my feet, and a wax candle to be lighted in my ſledge, and when all was ready to let me know. He did ſo, and I went as quickly as I was able, had my boots taken off, laid myſelf down under good fur covers, having a good furred gown wrapped cloſs with a ſaſh on my body, and a warm furred cap on my head, yet I really imagined that I would have been frozen to death this night; for after my ſervant had buckled the cover of the ſledge faſt, and retired, had I ſo deſigned, I would not have been able to get out again without help. In this condition, I put out the candle, and ſtill with my feet at the bottles of water which comforted me not a little, I fell aſleep, and ſlept ſound, till eight next morning, when I was rouſed from ſleep by being overturned amongſt the ſnow, as my driver was paſſing down a ſteep

hill: Nor did I hear the cannon which were discharged at their governor's departure. I was in a great sweat; but the men were not long before they had replaced all my affairs, and put me to bed; where I remained in pretty good condition till I arrived in Tsaritzin.

The city Tsaritzin is neat and very compact, the streets well laid out, but the houses are all of timber; it is surrounded with a deep dry ditch and high ramparts with bastions, well stored with great cannon. At Mr Cultzoff's the commandant, an old colonel, very serious desire, the Prince remained here till next morning, when we set out, and the day thereafter, arriving at Tchornajar, or black-hill, we travelled now on the Volga. Tchornajar is distant from Tsaritzin 112 versts, and from Astrachan 300. It is but a small town, fortified in the same manner as Tsaritzin, but they have not so many cannon. The Prince, having been informed that the ice below this town was not good, resolved to go hence in the morning, that he might pass this dangerous place in day-light. The city stands on a high ground, that they may see far into the desart, least the Kalmucks, who inhabit this country, make some sudden attack upon them. I shall describe these people afterwards. Next morning, we departed, escorted by 300 Cossacks and a party of dragoons; the way from the town to the river is very steep, and it was my lot,

at

at this time, to have a pair of very good young horſes in my ſledge, I was alſo in the rear: Whether the ſledge had bore hard upon the horſes, or the report of the cannon had frighted them, I know not, but they ran off, and my driver fell from his box, and left the horſes at their own will; my ſervant alſo ſlipt off from behind. The horſes galloped on, and had almoſt overturned the ſledge in which the Prince was. He, according to his former goodneſs, immediately gave orders to the dragoons and Coſſacks to endeavour to get betwixt my ſledge and a piece of the Volga on the weſt ſide, not frozen, about a mile or two long. My ſledge was unbuckled on the right ſide, looking to that unfrozen part of the Volga. I ſaw it, but knew not what to do, I attempted to get hold of a piſtol, in order to ſhoot one of the horſes, but they ran very ſwiftly; the ice was by no means ſmooth, many boards lying one upon another, being frozen together, made me imagine that, as I hoped, I ſhould be overturned, and conſequently prevented my getting a piſtol; at laſt, I ſpyed the horſemen get betwixt me and the water, who, with their whips and cries forced the horſes to run towards the eaſt ſhore, which gave me hopes that I ſhould at leaſt eſcape drowning: At laſt, a gallant Coſſack, upon a ſwift horſe, got hold of one of the reins of the horſe in the ſhafts, and, by a ſudden jerk, threw down that horſe; any

may

may eaſily imagine, that I made what haſte I could to get out of the ſledge, but was ſurpriſed, when out, that with great difficulty I could either ſtand or walk, a tremor, which had ſeized me, was ſo violent: But whether this proceeded from fear, to which I never was remarkably ſubject, or the irregular diverſity of motions, I ſhall not ſay; but the tremor continued more than twenty four hours, and ſuch a tremor I never experienced either before or ſince, though I at ſundry times, have been in as great danger, as will be ſeen in the ſequel. Nothing further remarkable happened in this journey, till we arrived all ſafe in Aſtrachan, which we did on the fifth of March.

CHAP. LIII.

A deſcription of the City and Kingdom of Aſtrachan, &c.

THE city of Aſtrachan is built upon an iſland called the iſland of Hares, that iſland lying eaſt and weſt, having the famous river Volga on its north ſide, it makes a pretty appearance to ſtrangers at their arrival from Ruſſia; becauſe they have a view of its length, and the ſteeples of all its churches with a very high brick wall, which ſurrounds both it and its citadel: Mr Hanway has

been

been misinformed. He says, it contains about 70,000 inhabitants. It certainly contains many more than an hundred thousand, but this in Russia, is not to be certainly known, as they keep no register of women and very young children. The city is in latitude 46 degrees 13 minutes, and 68 degrees east longitude. The citadel is built upon the west end of the city on a hill, the wall surrounding it is of brick, 30 feet high at least, and very thick, having many high strong bastions, mounted with a great number of large cannon: But it is not a regular fortification, though strong enough for any enemy in that country: Astrachan lieth 60 versts from the Caspian sea: In it are contained magazines of all kinds, the governor's and archbishop's palaces, the government's chancery where all affairs, civil and military, are judged of, and all the records are kept. The metropolitan church, a large monastery, all built with white freestone, guard-house, and several other buildings, are within the walls of the citadel: There are only three gates into the citadel, one from the city, another from the south opening into the Tartar suburbs, a third from the north towards the Volga. The wall of the city takes its beginning from the north east corner of the citadel, and runs eastward three quarters of a mile, then turns south a quarter of a mile, and proceeds from the south east corner west,

till

till it again joins the ſouth-eaſt corner of the citadel. There are only three gates looking towards the river, one only to the eaſt, and two to the ſouth. Like the citadel, it has many baſtions mounted with cannon, but not built in a regular way.

On the inſide of the walls, betwixt them and the houſes, there is a void ſpace, where none are allowed to build 20 fathoms broad, quite round the city. There are three long ſtreets from eaſt to weſt, and many croſs-ſtreets interſecting the former three. There are within the walls two large ſtone churches, and one of wood. I think the length of the city and citadel is equal to an Engliſh mile. The houſes are built with timber, and the ſtreets are laid over with timber alſo, ſo that a fire happening in this city muſt be very dangerous. The ſuburbs are many, and extend wide: They contain many more inhabitants than the city. There are two churches on the eaſt, and a large monaſtery of ſtone, one wooden church on the ſouth, and one betwixt the river and city on the north, all for thoſe of the Greek perſuaſion; beſides which, the reformed have one built with timber, the Romans have a monaſtery, and the Armenians have a fine church, theſe two are built of ſtone.

The hoſpitals are built without the ſuburbs on the eaſt, beſide the large monaſtery, both for the army and fleet, though the admiralty

is-

is built on the weſt end of the citadel, incloſed with a deep ditch and rampart, with baſtions mounted with cannon. The Ruſſian and Armenian merchants inhabit the eaſtern ſuburbs, the Ruſſians only the ſouth and north, but the ancient Tartar inhabitants live in the ſuburbs next to the admiralty. Within the city none of the Tartars are permitted to live, and they are forced to evacuate the city every evening before ſun-ſet; if they are found in it after that time, they are ſent to a guard-houſe, there being one at every gate, and next morning are ſeverely whipped on the bare back.

The Indians, and ſome Armenians, are permitted to live in two ſpacious caravanſeras, which have only two ports, at which guards are kept day and night; they are incloſed with high ſtone walls.

The kingdom of Aſtrachan on the ſouth is confined by Circaſſia, and 44 degrees 10 minutes north latitude, on the weſt by 62 degrees 30 minutes eaſt longitude, on the north by 52 degrees north latitude, and on the eaſt by 69 degrees eaſt longitude, as they compute; for the inhabitants have no certain knowledge of the extent of this great kingdom to the eaſt, poſſibly it may reach to the Jaik river, or further.

CHAP.

CHAP. LIV.

Being an Account of the Jaik river inhabitants, and a relation of what paſſed there, with ſome Anecdotes which the Author was informed of from creditable People, &c.

BEFORE I treat of what properly concerns Aſtrachan, I thought it would be agreeable to the reader, to be informed of the nations which live on the confines of that kingdom. The Coſſacks inhabit the Don on the eaſt. Circaſſia is on the ſouth, an account of which I ſhall give in the courſe of my travels, when I arrive in that country. The kingdom of Cazan, and part of Siberia, bound Aſtrachan on the north, but to the eaſt, as I ſaid before, the inhabitants are ignorant of their proper limits, it being all deſart, except the forts of Ilek, Borodinſkoi, and Orenburgh, which properly belong to the province of Ufimſkaja.

The river Jaik takes its riſe in very different parts, both ſouth and north. I ſhall deſcribe its courſe from the north. Streams run from the mountains and lakes in Ufimſkaja in the north latitude of 54 degrees 20 minutes, and 79 degrees eaſt longitude; it continues its courſe ſouth-eaſt through a vaſt deſart, and diſembogues itſelf into the Caſpian ſea, ſouth-

ſouth-

ſouth-eaſt from the city of Aſtrachan, diſtant about 140 verſts. At the diſtance of 2 or 300 verſts north from the mouth of this river, there is a large ſtrong town, which a colony of Don's Coſſacks built, and at preſent inhabit; they called it Jaik after the river. It ſeems that they hitherto have bravely defended themſelves againſt all the different Tartar tribes which ſurround them. Betwixt Aſtrachan city and Tſaritzin and the river Jaik, till you arrive at the town Jaik, there is not one fixed inhabited place. This vaſt deſart, nevertheleſs, is inhabited by different hoards of wild Tartars, which annoy their civilized neighbours very much. They who roam next the Caſpian are called Karakalpaaks, and they who roam to the north of the Karakalpaaks are called Kirgees and Baſkeers, they are ſaid to profeſs the Mahomedan religion: Many broils yearly happen betwixt them and the Kalmucks, nor is it in the power of Ruſſia to prevent this, although, as ſhall be hereafter explained, they are at no ſmall charges and trouble to keep peace amongſt them.

The Kirgees and Baſkeers, in the latter end of the year 1739, being Mahomedans, and underſtanding that the Ruſſians carried on a bloody war againſt their brethren the Turks, without the ſmalleſt provocation, fell ſuddenly upon the open and defenceleſs villages in the ſouth of Umſimafoſkaja province, murdered all the very old people who unluckily

fell in their way, together with the infants, and carried with them all the young people of both ſexes, propoſing, either to keep them for ſlaves, or elſe ſell them to others.

They could not have perpetrated ſuch villainy in a worſe time for themſelves. Vaſilic Nikititch Tatiſhoff was governor in Orenburg, a man, though I cannot commend his morals, as fit to treat with ſuch barbarians as any one in Ruſſia, of whom I ſhall have occaſion to ſay more afterwards. This governor, who had his ſpies every where, ſoon, not only got notice of the horrid depredations the Kirgees had committed, but certain advice where they were; and that they were living at all eaſe, void of care, and quite indifferent about what they had been doing. He preſently diſpatched 5000 regular troops, and 3000 Coſſacks, under able commanders, with proper inſtructions. They marched with all ſecrecy, and, although the Kirgees were ſaid to be upwards of 20,000 fighting men ſtrong, the Ruſſians fell on them in a morning, and made a terrible ſlaughter; few got away. The Ruſſians, who were with them, obtained their liberty, and the Kirgee and Baſkeer women and children were, in their turn, made priſoners; for the Ruſſians killed none, but ſuch as were able to carry arms.

This relation I had from a ſurgeon of dragoons, who was in the action, and had four male and female children for his ſhare; he

ſaid,

that he might have got 100, if he could have maintained them. He told me, that they were much pinched for want of provisions for such a number of people in the desart: That the soldiers have been known to sell either a boy or a girl for a pinch of snuff; and Mr Tatishoff, afterwards governor of Astrachan, confirmed this relation, which Mr Chenmitzer, for that was the surgeon's name, had told me. Since that terrible massacre, they never more were heard of, so long as I staid in Russia.

I said, that the Cossacks had first found out that fine river Jaik, and built a town to which they gave the name of the river. They fortified it strongly, so as to become respected by the strongest hoards of Tartars, and, of course, they were a good barrier to the Russian dominions. They acquired great riches by fishing and hunting, but fishing was their principal staple, which, when they had cured, they carried by water to Astrachan, and sold them there to be sent to Russia.

Before Peter the Great's time, though the Volga abounded with the best fish in the world, fishing was of no benefit to the crown. A poor peasant, named Demidioff, whom I was intimately acquainted with, when he was very rich: He could neither read nor write, yet he began that useful branch of commerce: He improved it so much, that when Peter was in Astrachan the first time, he sent for

him,

him, who told the Emperor all his ſchemes, and made it evident to his penetrating genius, that, if he had a ſmall ſum of money, he was in condition to make this one of the beſt branches of trade in Aſtrachan. The Great Peter ordered him 20,000 rubles, and gave him all encouragement, prohibiting any to moleſt him in any ſhape. In a few years thereafter, Demidioff paid off the Emperor's money, and had many veſſels of burden on the Volga. When I was there, he had ſhips of 200 tons trading to Perſia, and was eſteemed one of the richeſt merchants in Aſtrachan.

The fiſhing became ſo reſpectable, that taxations were laid upon it, before I arrived there, and a cantoir was erected to take care that they were duly collected; over and above this, the crown ſeized upon the ichthyocolla, and all kind of glew. Many years after this, the court got notice, that, in a ſhort time, the Jaik fiſhery would even vie with that of Aſtrachan, and reſolved to eſtabliſh a cantoir in Jaik, in the ſame manner as they had done in Aſtrachan: In conſequence of this, proper officers and writers were diſpatched to Jaik. (This happened about the time of my arrival.) When they arrived, they ſent for the Coſſacks, and declared to them the Imperial decree, probably in a haughty threatening manner. The Coſſacks ſtared at this, and urged that they had firſt found out this river; that they paid as much as any of the Don Coſſacks, from whom

they

were ſprung; that they were always true and faithful to the Empire; that they had, by great labour and expence, built this town, and had defended themſelves againſt all their neighbouring Tartar enemies, without the aſſiſtance of Ruſſia, at a very great expence of their blood; and laſtly, that, if it were not for fear of them, even Orenburgh would be in no ſmall danger from the great Tartar Prince Jean-beck-bater, who was able to aſſemble an army of 100,000 fighting men eaſily, and who had often put Orenburgh in no ſmall fright, notwithſtanding their formidable garriſon, *&c.* Theſe were their principal reaſons; but, to ſuch high lords, they ſignified nothing, and they inſiſted, not only to levy the taxes propoſed, but alſo forthwith to have a reſpectable garriſon eſtabliſhed there.

This was a bitter pill, and ſo very nauſeous, that that very night they ſummoned a council of the Coſſacks, and determined not to ſwallow it. Next morning, they waited upon theſe new-comers, and ſent them headlong into the other world, by drowning them in the river. Several expreſſes were diſpatched after that from Peterſburgh, to know what could be the reaſon they never had received any report from Jaik. The Coſſacks ſent them all the ſame way. At laſt, Mr Tatiſhoff was employed to find out what was become of the commiſſioners: He indeed got notice that they were all drowned; but, at the

the ſame time, adviſed the court to take no further notice of it, till the country was better peopled, and a few forts built about them. And thus this affair ended to the ſatisfaction of the Coſſacks. Certainly a government knows very little of ſound policy, if they think it a good ſcheme to oppreſs borderers.

Men, who think they are unreaſonably oppreſſed, will not fail, upon all occaſions, to take the firſt opportunity they meet with, to ſhake themſelves free of their oppreſſors, even at the riſk of life and liberty. How much blood the Romans, Engliſh, and Scots, have loſt, only to maintain their liberty, every perſon knows, or may be informed of by hiſtory: And we have frequently ſeen, from very ſmall beginnings, that many governments have been quite overturned, and much blood and treaſure loſt, by the ill-founded ſchemes of a weak, or wicked adminiſtration.

CHAP. LV.

What happened at our firſt coming to Aſtrachan.

HAVING in ſome meaſure cleared the way, and made the reader acquainted with the neighbourhood of Aſtrachan, I propoſe to let him know what is worthy of notice at the Prince's arrival. He was within three or four miles of the city, when many officers,

officers, and the principal inhabitants of the city, to the number of ſome hundreds, approached him, and, on the ice, which was very bad, paid their compliments to him, which he, in the moſt obliging manner, peculiar to himſelf, returned as he paſſed on.

They then returned behind the governor's *ſuite*, and ſo drove on to the city. When he entered under the principal port, the cannon began there, and were fired off quite round the city and citadel. When he entered the citadel, he was there received by the guards under arms, who paid their compliments with their arms, drums, and muſic. He next arrived at the governor's palace, and there was ſaluted by his own proper guard, conſiſting of a captain's command, viz. 120 men under arms, and a complete band of muſic.

I gave directions to my ſervant to get ſome room to put up my bed in for that night, till I ſhould have more leiſure to ſeek out a convenient lodging, and then went to ſee my ſick provided for. I had not been long about that, when the Princeſs deſired me to go into the great hall, where the Prince was. I did ſo: He was ſtanding ſpeaking with the principal officers, civil and military. There was one tall well-made old man, that bore a very diſtinguiſhed deportment, but he ſeemed very penſive. I inquired who he was? and was anſwered by the captain on duty, that his name was Younger; that he was a briga-

dier

dier, and commandant of the city; that it was thought he had almoſt loſt his judgment by a fright, which he would acquaint me of when more at leiſure; and laſtly, that his father was a Scots gentleman.

A great number of merchants entered the hall, every one having ſome coſtly preſent for the Prince; ſome with different wines, fruits, and ſweet-meats of all kinds; others with rich ſilks, ſattins, brocades, the produce of India and Perſia; others with cloths, *&c.* When the Prince obſerved them, he, in his homely way, returned them thanks, and ſaid, Gentlemen, I doubt not but you are accuſtomed to make preſents to your new governors, but I am ſo ſimple, that I never could take a preſent in my life, and therefore beg you'll let them be carried home: I am determined to diſtribute juſtice, as far as my judgment ſhall direct me, to great and ſmall alike. The honeſt man is always my boſom-friend, whatever his condition otherways may be. And I am to inform you, that, after this admonition, if any ſhall bring preſents to the Princeſs or any of my family, (you may believe me to be ſincere) I will look upon that perſon as my enemy, and ſhall ſhun him accordingly.

Then he turned to the gentlemen of the army, and ſaid, Gentlemen, you and I are quite ſtrangers; I hope you ſhall experience, that I am an honeſt man, and conſequently love honeſt men, and ſuch as delight in doing their duty

duty to her Majesty. Such I shall always esteem and honour, whether their rank is great or small. I have no doubt of every one's observing his duty, in his different station. I have only said this, that I may at once be known to you. All the gentlemen returned him thanks because he spoke his mind so freely. The merchants sent off their presents to their own homes; but one might easily have seen surprize in their countenances, and, (by this time I understood the Russian language very well,) I overheard them making their different remarks, though all agreed that they never had seen a governor, at his first arrival, before this, refuse a present; because, say they, such presents are not given by way of bribes, nor can such presents bear any other interpretation, than that of a certain regard which they wanted to express for the person of their governor.

He happened to cast his eye upon me, and desired to speak with me. He asked, If I was fatigued with my journey? and several other questions he put to me, as if he had been my father. I told him, that I only wanted a lodging. He said, in the most affectionate manner, that where-ever he lodged, I should have my share. Then he turned to the gentlemen, and said so much about me that I shall not repeat it, and withdrew to the Princess, and told her what had passed. She was very well pleased at every thing, but his

ſo very peremptorily refuſing the preſents, eſpecially as it never was forbidden, even by Peter the Great, who did not refuſe to take a preſent, purely from the reſpect people had for him.

After a ſhort ſtay, the gentlemen retired, and left the governor and his family to put their affairs to rights, and take their repoſe, which indeed we needed, ſince we left Tſchornaya, becauſe we had no houſes betwixt that city and Aſtrachan to lodge in, except zemlenkes, which, as has already been deſcribed, are built under-ground, and therefore not agreeable to every one; add to this, that we were obliged to keep ſtrict watch, left the Kalmucks made an aſſault upon us unprovided.

CHAP. LVI.

Concerning the Inhabitants and other People living in, and immediately about Aſtrachan.

RUSSIANS, in our days, are the natural, and the greateſt number of the inhabitants of the city of Aſtrachan, but the kingdom is inhabited by Kalmucks and Nagai Tartars; the laſt of which are the deſcendents of the antient inhabitants, who were conquered by Ivan Vaſilitch the tyrant. They,

at

at this day, pay very great respect to their chiefs, who are called by them Murzas.

The city is inhabited by great numbers of Georgians, who embrace the Greek religion, and serve in the army, as also Armenians. They do not seek much after any other glory than merchandise, and are reckoned as cunning as the Jews, though they all profess the Christian religion. I have often thought, and am still of opinion, that they, viz. the Armenians and Georgians, are the descendents of the Jews who were sent into captivity by Nebuchadrezzar. They are liker the Jews than any other people I ever saw, and, though they are Christians, yet they have all the cunning and deceit of their progenitors.

There are many Persians, and various kinds of Tartars, which I do not rank among the inhabitants, because they plead dependence upon their own proper countries.

The Kalmucks properly inhabit that great desart lying betwixt the rivers Volga and Don, having Circassia on the south, and the line, already described, running betwixt the Volga and the Don on the north. They till no land, but feed their numerous flocks. They have no fixed place of abode, but emigrate from one place to another continually, living in tents made in the form of bee-hives; the better kinds are covered with felt, and the poorer sort with rushes or reeds. The Kalmucks live in the borders of Circassia in the

winter

winter ſeaſon, but, when the ſpring advances, they proceed northerly, even to Tſaritzin, and return back again as the winter draweth nigh. There are many different hoards, tho' they are all one kind of people, ſeemingly without mixture; every hoard has a chief, but all their chiefs are ſubject to one Prince, called Chan. Their Chan conſtantly keeps a reſident in Aſtrachan, to take care that his ſubjects have juſtice done them; and a captain preſides over a cantoir, where many writers and interpreters are kept in pay for that purpoſe.

The Ruſſians pretend, that they are ſubjects of their empire: The Kalmucks deny that altogether, but alledge, that they are happy in being under their protection. The Ruſſians always keep a reſident at the Chan's court, with 2 or 300 ſoldiers, that he may repreſent every thing neceſſary to the Chan. It was Donduk Ambo who reigned over them, when we arrived in Aſtrachan. This prince kept very good order, and was a ſevere diſciplinarian: There were very few great robberies in his days, but when any happened to be brought to him, who had committed any heinous crime, he cauſed break their arms and legs, and let them be expoſed to the wild beaſts, without meat or drink, till they expired. They profeſs the religion of the Chineſe, and pay worſhip to idols, but acknowledge, that they are only idols to expreſs the great

great regard they have for ſome of their ſaints. They acknowledge only one God, keep holidays, and have no unbecoming way of worſhip. They praiſe God by vocal and inſtrumental muſic, having at ſuch times books in their hands, the notes of which are wrote from the top to the bottom of the page. Their muſic conſiſts of ſtringed inſtruments and cymbals, to which they beat time, and indeed it is by no means diſagreeable. They have a ſpear about eight feet long, headed as other ſpears, broad, and double gilt; the neck of the head is encompaſſed by a ring, to which a leather thong is faſtened of about a foot long, to the end of which a piece of lead or other metal is made faſt. When they worſhip, one placeth the end of this ſpear on the ground, and, by an imperceptible motion of the hand, cauſeth the metal turn round, during the time of their worſhip. Upon enquiry, they informed me, that this rotation was an emblem of eternity.

They certainly believe in a future ſtate, and have ſome ſingular rejoicing in the time of new moons, by building a ſmall tower of earth, placing on it veſſels filled with oil and other materials, which they ſet fire to, and which exhibits light of different colours, round which they dance, gambol, and ſing. They marry only one wife at once, nor muſt they know other women during their marriage-ſtate. Their ceremony of marriage is reaſonable,

ſonable, though not agreeable to the cuſtoms of any other country I know. It is thus: A young pair, agreed betwixt themſelves, retire, and live as man and wife for one year. If the young woman produceth a child in the ſpace of one year, the marriage is completed and lawful; but if not, they either make another year's trial, or part: Nor is the woman in the leaſt reflected upon; ſhe is as greedily picked up for another trial by others, as if ſhe were a young virgin.

Women, when married, are faithful to their huſbands, for a contrary practice is puniſhable with death, if the huſband is ſo minded, and he is alſo executioner. An example of this I was once very ſorry to ſee. Some young men, belonging to my hoſpital, returning one evening home from the city, and having been overtaken with liquor, as they paſſed to the hoſpital by a few Kalmuck tents, they went in, and gave the woman liquor to intoxicate her. The huſband not being preſent when they came there, gave them opportunities of uſing what liberties they pleaſed with the woman. In ſhort, it was ſaid, ſhe was caught by her huſband in the very act. He diſmiſſed her gueſts without quarrelling with them, thereafter put his wife to death, and, next morning, I, with others, ſaw him dragging the dead body towards a bridge, from the middle of which he threw her into the river.

Their

Their priefts never marry, but then they have a right, by their law, to go into any man's wife for a night. The men are fo far from refenting this, that they take it as a very great honour done to them. Their priefts have no riches, for they are free to ufe any thing belonging to any of the Kalmucks, as their own property. They make pilgrimages to China, for inftructions and benedictions from their lama or high prieft.

I hope our reverend fathers will not be difobliged at this narration, as I write nothing but what I have been informed of by many to be true; and, I am of opinion, that few young men, in the vigour of youth, could refift the cravings of the moft fenfible defires and paffions, in a country where there is not only no reftraint, but where it is thought to be a part of their duty, and undoubted rights and privileges.

Their burials are very fingular. I was told, that they bury, as we do, in the earth for a certain number of years; for an equal number, they throw their dead into the water, for another they burn the dead bodies; and laftly, at equal terms they expofe the naked bodies on the ground, to be devoured by any animal; but they think, if their dogs eat them, it is a great fign of happinefs in their afterftate. I am very certain that they drew them out from their tents but a very fhort fpace, to be devoured by any beaft or fowl, all the time

I was

I was at Aſtrachan, and that their dogs fed chiefly on them and fiſh, till I got a ſtop put to it, as the reader will be informed of in the ſequel. They make continual wars or depredations upon their neighbours, but particularly againſt the Karacalpaaks, which obligeth the Ruſſians to keep about three regiments of dragoons, and 4 or 5000 Coſſacks, upon the banks of the Volga every ſummer, to prevent their paſſing that river. But generally it happens, that the Kalmucks have done the Karacalpaaks all the damage they could for the year, before the Ruſſians can get to their ſtations; becauſe the Kalmucks paſs the river on the ice, and travel into the Karacalpaak country at the time when they are leaſt on their guard, murder and deſtroy great numbers, and carry many into captivity, together with their herds and numerous flocks of cattle.

The Karacalpaaks can purſue them no further than the Volga, becauſe, by the time they arrive upon the eaſtern banks, the Ruſſians have formed their line, and deny them paſſage. The Karacalpaaks can only act againſt them in the winter ſeaſon, when their formidable ſtrength inhabit the deſart on the borders of Circaſſia, 5 or 600 verſts from the weſt ſide of the Volga; wherefore they kill and deſtroy all the poor Kalmucks which happen to fall in their way. Of their actions inſtances will be given in the courſe of my travels.

travels. The Kalmucks are a very ſwarthy, broad faced, ſmall eyed people. They are indeed very ſtrong and robuſt; their noſes are very little raiſed above their faces, except at the noſtrils, where you obſerve two large broad holes. The Nagai and Karacalpaaks are a little ſwarthy, from their being, I ſuppoſe, in the fields during the ſummer ſeaſon, but in other reſpects, they are as well formed as any man in Europe, and their women are very agreeable. The Nagai till and dreſs the grounds, in which they ſow millet, pulſe, oats, and Indian wheat, with a variety of the fineſt melons in the world. They live in houſes in the neighbourhood of Aſtrachan in the winter ſeaſon, but dreſs the land, feed their herds, hunt, and fiſh during the ſummer; and, for their greater conveniency, live in tents, not very unlike the Kalmucks, but much more cleanly every way.

No broils happen betwixt the Nagai and Kalmucks; for the Nagai inhabit the iſlands betwixt Aſtrachan and the Caſpian ſea, whereas the Kalmucks are obliged to feed their flocks in the deſart to the weſt of the Volga. Their cattle are dromedaries, horſe, horned cattle, and ſheep, very ſingular for their tails, called by the inhabitants kardruick. The tails weigh about one-fourth of the ſheep. They are very large, rather bigger than any I ever ſaw in England. In the beginning of ſummer, the Kalmucks ſhear the hair from

the dromedaries, and ſell it to the Aſtrachan merchants. I ſuppoſe it is what we call mohair. I frequently have worn cloth made of it. Their Prince always keeps ſtrong guards of 20, 30, or even 40,000 warriors about his perſon. Their arms are ſcymitars, bows and arrows. They are the beſt bowmen, I believe, in the world, learning the bow from their infancy. They never ſubmit to aſk their lives, and ſeldom give quarter to any enemy; nor has the utmoſt Ruſſian ſeverity been able to curb this barbarous diſpoſition; it was for this that they were expelled the Ruſſian army in the late war againſt his Pruſſian Majeſty.

They are the moſt hardy of the whole human race. I am told, that they eat any thing, and in a march, they would not go a mile out of their way to paſs any river a mile broad. They plunge into the water, and proceed with the greateſt intrepidity.

CHAP. LVI.

Concerning the Soil, Animals, Vegetables, and Minerals about the City of Aſtrachan.

MR Hanway, as was ſaid, placeth Aſtrachan on the long iſland: But the inhabitants, who ought to know beſt, call it the iſland of Hares. In the true ſenſe, it is not a large

a large iſland, for a branch of the Volga waſhes it from the north round the eaſt ſide, and, at the diſtance of two miles ſouth, it caſts off a ſmall branch which runs ſtraight weſt, and falls again into the Volga, about a mile or two ſouth from the city. The ſoil, not only of this iſland, but of the reſt, and alſo of the deſart, is very light and ſandy, but it is ſo very much mixed with ſalt, that it produceth only, naturally, a great variety of Kals, vaſt quantities of liquorice, reeds, geniſta aculeata, an herb called Aſtrachania, nitraria, and others of the like nature. The earth will produce no grain, unleſs it has, during the winter ſeaſon, lain under water; wherefore the Tartars have great dikes, which they open or ſhut, as they intend to have grain, or waſh out the ſalt, when they intend to ſow a piece of ground, they cut through the dike on the loweſt end of the valley, and let out the water which formed a lake the preceeding year, and, in two or three days, from the exceſſive heat and drought of the climate, it is fit for tilling, then they dreſs it, and ſow it with what grain they pleaſe, and it is incredible what increaſe it produces, whether grain or fruits.

They ſow many different kinds of melons and pompions which they eat with bread: The water melon, I was told by our countrymen who had been in the Weſt Indies and Italy, is far preferable to any growing in theſe countries:

countries: Indeed, I drank little liquor to satisfy nature, when I could get the water melon; it is extremely healthy, but the other melons are very dangerous, producing agues accompanied with dysenteries. Astrachan produceth the largest grapes I ever saw, and very agreeable to eat, though, the wine has a sharpness uncommon, which I believe proceeds from the salt of the earth. There are two kinds of mulberries here, the red and the white, the white kind, or a particular kind of white mulberries, had almost killed some of the Prince's servants by vomiting excessively, and if I had not been present, and prevented, his children would have shared the same fate.

Astrachan gardens produce very many vegetables, but they must be frequently watered for the heat and drought is very great, and showers are seldom seen here, indeed in the evenings and night-time, there falls a very great dew, dangerous for the stranger; but this is far from being sufficient to wash the salts from the earth: For an hour after sun-rise, the salt lies upon the surface of the earth like a hoar-frost.

The inhabitants of Astrachan are blessed with all kinds of tame animals which we have, and by a far greater number of wild than we have, or than I can describe; the following is a sample, wild swine, deer of different kinds, such as the elk, red and fallow

deer

deer, and the antelope, which in the desart roam in herds to the number of some hundreds: The last mentioned is not well known, and therefore I shall give the following description of it, which may be relied upon, because I have killed very many. The antelope is about the bigness of a fallow deer, of a white gray colour, the head resembles something that of a cow, but its nose has no gristle, and feels in your hand as soft as velvet, it has beautiful black, yet bright prominent eyes, they are all purblind, so that a man may easily get within shot of them, they are legged and footed like other deer, they have a pair of beautiful horns, not branched, tapering from the root to the top, they have rings at equal distances from the root to the top, but they are not spiral as some write, their flesh is extremely tender and delicious, but I think it has some taste of musk, which was the reason that I could never eat of it above twice or thrice in one year; They are very swift, but cannot, in the winter season, especially, hold it out long; for I have taken them frequently with grayhounds, although, at their first setting out, they outrun the dogs by far. They are the finest runners I ever beheld, you would imagine, as they run from you, that they incline very much to one side, and that their feet scarcely touch the ground.

Hares

Hares are in very great plenty: I never ſaw in Aſtrachan, nor heard of either bears or wolves, and I ſuſpect this may proceed from the want of their natural coverts, woods; for there are no woods, except in the iſlands, and in the time of high water, the iſlands are all covered over, except the higher kind, and the Tartars of all nations are naturally ſo keen hunters, that they would ſoon extirpate any number: Nothing but the ſwiftneſs of deer keeps up the breed. There are wild horſes in Aſtrachan as I was informed, but I never ſaw any of them alive, they are run down, and hunted like other wild animals, and it is ſaid, they are excellent food, which I believe to be true. I have eaten what was called wild horſe, but it was much preferable to any beef.

At an entertainment, my wife being with child, Mr Thomſon, our landlord acquainted me, that there was to be a diſh of horſeſtakes, and deſired I ſhould acquaint Mrs Cook, leſt, if ſhe got notice afterwards, it might prove of bad conſequence to her: I did ſo, ſhe did not eat, but I did, our company numbered nine, and except Mrs Cook, every one eat plentifully, and declared they never had eaten ſo good beef in England, for they imagined it was beef. One Mrs Bell, who loved what was good very well, declared that ſhe never had eaten ſuch beef in Northumberland, where ſhe was born, but after

ſhe

ſhe was informed that it was horſe fleſh, ſhe ſoon turned ſick, and threw it up; but I imagine this proceeded neither from the bad quality of the ſtakes, nor from the delicacy of her conſtitution, but truly from the quantity ſhe had eaten, which was not the moſt moderate.

Before I leave this ſubject, I am obliged to mention one of the moſt beautiful quadrupeds that I ever ſaw, it is called by the Ruſſians and Circaſſians, the wild-goat, and is properly a native of Caucaſus. I never ſaw more than one, which was ſent as a very great preſent to the Prince: It is ſaid, that there are many of them, but that they inhabit the moſt inacceſſible mountains in Caucaſus, where neither horſes nor hounds can with ſafety paſs; wherefore, though they ſhoot them ſometimes, yet it is very rare that they can catch them alive; this was living, and did not ſeem to be old. It was neither ſo bulky nor ſo high, nor indeed any way reſembled a goat, it had no beard, which indeed might have proceeded from its youth: It had a well-proportioned head, with gentle tapering jaws ,beautifully prominent, bright fiery black eyes; the head fixed to a long tapering neck, which grew agreeably greater, till it reached the well formed breaſt, the body of a very regular length, with a gentle belly, and ſtrong well built poſteriors, tapering legs, and cloven hooſs, with a ſmall tail

like

like a deer; it is all over ſpotted brown and white, but rather wreathed on the ſides. I was told that it is good veniſon, but never taſted it; the Prince ſent it into Ruſſia.

All the world have heard of the wonderful baronetze, philoſophers and naturaliſts were divided in opinion about it, they could not adjudge it to be an animal, nor properly a vegetable: It was ſaid that the baronetze grew in the kingdom of Aſtrachan, upon a ſtalk two foot high, from the top of which grew a lamb-like fruit, covered with a fine fur every way reſembling that of a young lamb! Who are ignorant that the Armenian or other merchants ſold one to the late King of Pruſſia, which he as a very great curioſity, made a preſent of it to the Royal Society? who ſuſpecting a fraud, aſked and obtained leave of the King to diſſect it: within the ſkin, they diſcovered ſaw-duſt or ſome other materials with which it was ſtuffed, and the navel pierced with a ſtick, which was ſo fixed, as to appearance, looked like a ſtalk. It was alſo ſaid that no graſs grew within ſome feet diſtance of this baronetze, becauſe no doubt, it was ſuppoſed that the monſter eat it up! for it had a mouth, nor could it miſs; becauſe it was only a lamb-ſkin ſtuffed. So full of this whim, was our Archiator Dr Fiſher, that he, at the deſire of his correſpondents, wrote to Mr Malloch, our field apothecary, Mr Swartze, and me, to make all

diligent

diligent ſearch for this wonderful herb, tho' it was then known the Royal Society had made the diſcovery I juſt now mentioned, but no doubt he imagined that though the King of Pruſſia had been impoſed upon, yet ſuch wonderful vegetables might exiſt. We, obedient to our Archiator, made ſearch, we alſo aſked all the different Tartars who inhabit the deſarts of Aſtrachan, and were ridiculed and laughed at, as we very well deſerved, theſe people juſtly wondering that men who were ſaid to be very learned, could, upon ſuch ſlight informations, be ſo very eaſily impoſed upon; and from this, inferring, how properly I ſhall not ſay, that much of our learning was certainly chimerical.

CHAP. LVII.

A Continuation of the Hiſtory of Animals.

THE plumed inhabitants of Aſtrachan are too numerous for me to give an account of them, and indeed, I ſcarcely believe that the different nations who inhabit and traverſe that kingdom, put all together, are equal to ſuch a taſk; I ſhall however, give a ſhort deſcription of a few, leaving the reſt to men who have more time, and abler pens than I pretend to.

The pelican of the desart, onocrotalus or pelecanus being the largest fowl, I begin with it. It is as large as the gray eagle, which I think is greater than the swan, it is endowed with a very long bill pointed, but broad where it joins the head; the upper half is very solid, but the lower is as it were two horns, from the point diverging towards the head; betwixt which is a very capacious large bag sufficient to take in a very large fish, suppose a carp, which I have seen them swallow with ease, the head is large, the neck well proportioned to the bigness of the fowl, as is the body, the wings and tail are very long to carry such a weight: They are of a white gray colour, are great fishers, and flock together to the number of 2 or 300. They sit upon the banks of the river through the day and night-time, and only fish in the morning and evening. When they fish they fly to a bank, the bottom of which they can nearly reach with their feet, which are webbed something like a goose, and join one to one in such a manner, that a fish can scarcely pass by them, especially because they join their wings to their neighbours, and immersing them and their spread tails into the water, form a very great line something resembling a crescent, enclosing all the small fish betwixt them and the shore, to which they proceed slowly, picking up the fish till they are got on shore, which they do very nimbly: It is a very harmless

harmleſs bird, only a great deſtroyer of fiſh. Where they hatch their young I know not: They taſte ſo much of fiſh that they are not eaten by the inhabitants, and they depart towards Perſia in the winter. Another there is, which the Ruſſians likeways call pelican, the Germans *lebel ganſe*: The body of it is white as ſnow, its legs are long and black, as is its bill, which from round near the head turns an inch broad at leaſt at the fartheſt extremity, it is full of ſharp prickles fit to hold any thing it may catch, it is as white as ſnow; and from the hind part of the head grow five or ſix long milk-white beautiful feathers, which the Empreſs Anne and her ladies wore, placed in ſockets of gold on their head-dreſs; the body of this pelican is about as big as a Muſcovy duck; they are fiſhers, and through the whole day run upon the banks of ſhallow lakes, continually directing their broad bill from one ſide to the other, that they may readily apprehend their fiſh. They are not very delicious food; becauſe they partake of the fiſh taſte, though I have frequently eaten them.

There is another water-fowl called by the Ruſſians corovaika, it is all of a colour, but not quite black; it is about the bigneſs of a hen, has a long crooked black bill like a ſnipe but much longer, it lives and ſeeks its food on the banks of the rivers and lakes, yet it does not taſte of fiſh: Its fleſh is brown, but extremely

extremely delicious, although it is not fat, it is very tender, it is not ſhy. Wherefore they are eaſily killed. There are very many ſwans, and a very great variety of ducks. I ſhall only deſcribe two kinds which are not known in this country, at leaſt I have not heard of them, and I am ſo far diſtant from any good libraries, that I only can conſult my own. One kind is of a brown-red colour, but more red on the breaſt than any other part of the body: They fly in flocks, but a little ſcattered, and are always near rivers or lakes, though I never ſaw any of them ſwimming. If you happen to kill one of them, all thoſe who heard the report of the gun, immediately take wing and fly towards the place where the fowler ſtands; and if he does not conceal the killed duck, they continue ſo long to fly round, making a very mournful tone, that an indifferent good ſportſman may kill a very great number of them without altering his ſituation; But they are not good to eat, taſting very dry, hard, and fiſhy. There is another kind extremely ſmall not bigger than a quail, it is very beautiful, exactly ſhaped like a duck, but the feathers are curiouſly diverſified with green, white, red and yellow. They are ſhy, and I imagine never were eaten. I only once killed one at Derbent with a ball; you have no chance with ſmall ſhot, as they permit none to come ſo near them.

I ſhall

I ſhall juſt mention another water-fowl, and make an end of them. The one I mean is of a white colour, but a little variegated with either black or green. It has two very long legs red as blood, and wades deep into the water; the bill is red, but from the head it projects in a horizontal figure, and then it makes an angle, and turns downwards towards the breaſt. It fiſhes by wading, but does not ſwim. Every kind of fowls which are to be found on the land of Great Britain, are alſo to be found here, and therefore I ſhall not deſcribe them; only I cannot paſs by one remarkable accident, which happened long after I arrived in Aſtrachan. One day walking by a large field of millet, in company with another, my dog went among the millet and ſprung ſome quails, ſome of which we ſhot. A Tartar, to whom the field belonged, came to us. We imagined, before he came near us, that he deſigned to chide us for permitting the dog to go among the millet, and would, for that reaſon, have been glad we had been ſomewhere elſe; not that we were in the leaſt afraid of any thing the Tartar could do, but the thoughts of having wantonly wronged a harmleſs kind of people, were very diſagreeable. In ſhort, when he came to us, he with great courteſy told us, that theſe birds deſtroyed his millet, and that if we liked the diverſion of killing them, if we would take the trouble to go into the field among the millet, it was probable we would get 100 for one:

one: He ſaid he would go to his tent and provide ſome delicious melons by the time we ſhould return, not doubting but that we would be very thirſty.

We readily agreed to this ſcheme, and, as few people ſhot there, killed a great many. We arrived in his tent afterwards, and obſerved, that we did not care to walk among his millet, leſt we ſhould deſtroy much with our feet and the dogs. He returned for anſwer, that it was true that we might deſtroy ſome, but that men never would deſtroy much; and affirmed, that the quails deſtroyed more than if many men were to paſs through it daily, after it was once headed. He ſaid, that men naturally, for the love they had for grain, never would raſhly tread it down, but carefully mark their footſteps; that the dogs indeed, ſaid he, would ſhake ſome, was certain; but, he averred, that that altogether would not equal one tenth part of what the quails devoured and ſhook.

After this I many times diverted myſelf in this way, and many of my friends, with eating the quail, which, however delicious, were ſo fat, that I could make but two or three meals of them in a ſeaſon. The people in Aſtrachan alſo ſaid, that they never had known quails ſhot in that neighbourhood before that time. From what is ſaid, it is indiſputable, that here there is no want of wild fowl and the beſt quadrupeds in the world; but if the

land

land produceth ſo luxuriantly, the water, the famous Volga, produceth to the full as great variety and plenty of the moſt delicious fiſh.

The belugo is the firſt I ſhall mention, as the largeſt in that mighty river. I imagine it is ſo compleatly deſcribed in Ray's *ſynopſis methodica piſcium*, that I may refer the reader to it under the name of *Attilus*, by *Rondel. Bellon. de aquatil. p.* 126. *Geſn. Aldrov. Adella et Adano, hodie Italis dictis, &c.* which he may read, page 113 of the above book. He indeed, and ſome others, thought that it was a fiſh only to be found in the rivers of Italy, Lombardy, the Danube, and Boriſthenes. I imagine that the huſo, attilus, and belugo, is the ſame fiſh. It is indeed very like the ſturgeon in make, but much larger. It frequently weighs more than 1000 lb. A ſtone, or rather a bone, is found in the head of the belugo, which, when broken in two, one would imagine, by the colour and lines through it, that it is a piece of *mercurius ſublimatus corroſivus*; but every one knows, that the ſublimate is very ponderous, but this is very light. It is kept as a curioſity, and is ſaid to be a great lithontriptic. I have uſed it, but cannot ſay much to its praiſe.

In the year 1740, I ſent a very large one to my learned and worthy friend Dr Sanchiez, phyſician to the Empreſs. The belugo is ſo much like the ſturgeon, and, as ſaid above, ſo well deſcribed by the great Ray, that I ſhall

ſay

ſay no more of. The ſturgeon is ſo well known, that it would take up time needleſsly to ſay any thing about it more, than only that the Volga abounds ſo much with it, that it makes great part of the fiſh-commerce betwixt Ruſſia, other countries, and Aſtrachan. The Volga produceth white ſalmon, a very fat and unwholeſome fiſh; carp, pike, perch, a fiſh as large as a ſalmon, but not ſo good, which the Ruſſians call ſudaak; ſmelts, and an incredible variety of ſmall fiſh. I ſhall only mention two, becauſe, I believe, they are little known in this country; the firſt is the ſtirlet, it is made very like to a ſturgeon, but never ſo large, and has no bone in its body, in place whereof it has cartilages, which may be, and are frequently eaten. This is a moſt delicious fiſh. The biggeſt I ever ſaw weighed only 35 lb. Troy. The other fiſh I ſhall mention is called by the Ruſſians ſom, and their young ſoimka. It has a large flat, round head, a mouth in the form of a creſcent, ſet full of teeth like an heckle; its neck, and as far as the *anus*, is of an equal bigneſs, from thence to the tail it grows gradually ſmaller. It has ſcarcely any ſcales, is very much ſkinned like an eel, and has large eyes. Some of them are a yard or more in circumference.

The ſom is a bold fiſh, and will attack a man, and if out of his depth will eaſily drown him, being both big and long. He meaſures, if

if old, five feet and ſome inches. The Ruſſians will not eat of it, becauſe it eats men. The Kalmucks greedily devour it. I have eaten of a young ſom, and found it very delicious, the fleſh being as white as milk. One day I had very near loſt an excellent water-dog, by ſome young ſom; long he ſtruggled, but at laſt got free. Had it been an old one, he would have taken the dog eaſily to the bottom. Many men, when ſwimming, have been drowned by the ſom.

CHAP. LIX.

Concerning the different Methods the Aſtrachanians have to take Fiſh, cure them, and their Method of making Caviar, called by the Ruſſians Ikra.

I Would not be thought here to know intimately all their ways of managing theſe branches of buſineſs; yet I hope what I write will be ſo intelligible, that any may underſtand my meaning. I am confident, that many will find it new; and altho' I have formerly written theſe accounts to my learned correſpondents, yet many who may read this, never have ſeen the other.

The fiſhers, who live on the iſlands of the Volga in zemlenkes, or wooden houſes under-ground, catch their fiſh with hooks, nets,

and harping irons. Though theſe are the inſtruments with which we catch fiſh, yet I'm perſuaded, that they uſe them differently, both ſummer and winter. With lines and hooks baited they take the ſturgeon, and all other fiſh leſs in magnitude; but very ſeldom can they take the belugo in this manner; wherefore they make uſe of a ſtrong rope, 1, 2, or 300 ells long, and, at the diſtance of every two ells or leſs, from one end of the rope to the other, they fix large barbed hooks, but not baited, with their ſharp points ſtanding upwards, looking over each ſide of the rope. The rope thus prepared they place acroſs the river, letting it down to the bottom, with the points of the hooks above the rope, and fix a buoy to each end of it. The belugo, which is chiefly taken in this manner, loves to ſwim near the ſandy bottom of the river, and he ſwims ordinarily very rapidly; therefore, whether he is ſwimming with or againſt the ſtream, he has a great chance of being hooked in the belly, becauſe the points of the hooks look to each ſide of the rope. If the grip is but ſmall, he breaks off; but the greateſt number of the largeſt belugo are thus taken. When the fiſher miſſes his buoys at the places he put them in, he is certain that a fiſh has been there, and ſo ſails about till he finds them, and then coils up the rope very carefully into the boat. If the fiſh is not ſpent, he may draw the boat and rope after

him

him for a long while; but at laſt, being quite exhauſted, the fiſhers gently draw him near the boat, and, before he touch it, they ſtrike him on the head with an iron hammer, but have the rope ready to let go, if they ſhould miſs the proper place, for he will ſwim a great way, and, if they do not give him rope enough, he would eaſily draw the boat, tho' large, under water. Thus to the fiſher it is very troubleſome and dangerous to take a belugo, though, to a ſpectator, it affords very agreeable diverſion.

The nets which are uſed in the Volga are both ſtrong, long, and deep: They are from 50 to 100 fathoms long. In ſummer they place the net ſo as to make the figure of half a circle, out of their boats, and bring the ropes fixed to both ends of the net aſhore, at a great diſtance the one end from the other; then, having a great number of men, they pull till they get near the bank, when they row their boats within the net, and, with their barbed irons, they ſtrike the larger fiſh, and take them into their boats; but it requires much patience and great toil. Laſtly, they draw out the net with an incredible number of different fiſh. If a ſtrong old belugo happens to be amongſt them, he frequently breaks the net, gets away, and lets many priſoners eſcape; ſo that the fiſher is never glad to ſee a large belugo in the net. In the winter ſeaſon they cannot uſe ſuch large nets, but I

have

have ſeen them uſe nets of betwixt 30 and 50 fathoms long; and the way they do is this: They cut a large ſquare hole through the ice on the ſide of the river, for extracting the net; then, oppoſite to that ſquare hole, they cut another at a juſt diſtance, ſo that a ſtraight line drawn betwixt theſe two holes forms a diameter to a large circle, which they afterwards form with a number of holes cut thro' the ice, at ſuch a diſtance one from the other, that they can reach with a long pole. Having now made all their holes, they introduce into the middle hole, far in the river or lake, two poles, for the greater expedition, and ſhove one forward on each ſide, from one hole to the other, till they meet at the firſt made ſquare hole at the ſhore. A rope having been made faſt to the end of each pole, ſerves to conduct the net regularly, ſo as to form a circle, which, with the aſſiſtance of many men, they draw out of the ſquare hole.

In this manner, I once, near Aſtrachan, ſaw an incredible number of different fiſh taken by a number of men. They catch ſmaller fiſh as big as carp, pike, or ſalmon, with a barbed harping iron, made faſt to a long pole, (which the Scots call liſter,) as we do, particularly in the time of high water, when the fiſh play among the graſs; but there are few if any red ſalmon in the Volga. As every one knows how fiſh are taken with bait, I ſhall ſay nothing of it further, than that I

have

have ſeen a belugo thus taken in the winter ſeaſon, which was ſo ponderous, that, the fiſhermen aſſured me, it would be, though fixed upon ſledges, a large load for two good horſes to draw on the ice.

The Ruſſians prepare caviar almoſt from every kind of fiſh: Thus, I have frequently, at the beſt tables in that empire, eaten freſh caviar from pike. The Ruſſians have three different ways of preparing caviar: The firſt is the ſimpleſt and beſt, and is truly but a part of the other two operations. Caviar is the ſpawn or *ova* of the female fiſh. That prepared for keeping, and for the Ruſſian and foreign market, is extracted chiefly from the belugo and ſturgeon; that of the ſtirlet is, I imagine, all conſumed at home, being extremely delicious food. The only art uſed in the firſt preparation, is, carefully to clear the *ova* from their membranes and filaments, which they do by ſhaking and waſhing them; then, under a ſhade, they place them upon a ſieve or board, ſo that the ſuperfluous moiſture may drain off. This freſh caviar is ſold at Aſtrachan at about three pence *per* 12 ounce. The ſecond method of preparing it is, firſt to cleanſe it, as has been ſaid, and caſk it up well ſalted, which is fit either for foreign or Ruſſian markets. The third way is, to prepare as formerly, and, when well ſalted, they put it into a preſs to ſqueeze out much of the moiſture; this is called preſſed caviar;

caviar; but I do not think it good, for it loſes much of the delicious taſte of that prepared the ſecond way. I imagine no part of any fiſh, at leaſt which I have taſted, is comparable to the freſh caviar. The fiſhermen have ſtages well aired, though the rays of the ſun cannot penetrate the roof, where they cut open their large fiſh, and either ſun-dry them, or ſalt them, and then pack them up for the market. The ſmaller fiſh, being cut open, and the guts taken out, are ſo perfectly ſun-dried, that, upon the banks of the river, they build them up into ſtacks, and let them ſtand expoſed to the open air till they are ſhipped off. In this manner they prepare the carp. I have known 100 carp bought from the net for a ruble. In London, their tongues preſerved alone, I doubt not, would bring to the fiſhmonger ten times that value. I have frequently bought a live ſturgeon at Aſtrachan for three pence, and ſo the reſt. One is always ſure of fiſh upon the Volga. The fiſhers never would take money from me, but gave *gratis*, for me and the people with me, as much as we could eat, and ſome to carry along with us; and if I gave them a glaſsful of ſpirits, they expreſſed great ſatisfaction. I had almoſt forgot to acquaint the reader, that the largeſt, fulleſt, and beſt taſted cray-fiſh I ever met with, are to be found on the banks of the Volga; and, for a penny, one may get as many as ſix men can eat. In half an hour, a

man

man accuſtomed to catch them, may get a baſket full, or as many as he can conveniently bring home.

There are but few reptiles in Aſtrachan. I have ſeen only three different kinds. The firſt is very rare, it may be two ells long, and is ſpeckled yellow and black. I never heard that they hurt any perſon, though ſome ſay that they are noxious. The ſecond kind are ſpeckled black and white; they are not ſo large as the firſt, but are quite innocent, unleſs they are irritated, and their number is incredible. In the month of March, firſt when they make their appearance, they are very feeble, and ſcarcely can crawl, and ly in ſome pit or hollow place, many of them linked together; but, as the heat advances, they get ſtrength. The third kind is the viper, which is ſo well known, that I ſhall ſay nothing about them. Poſſibly there is a greater variety, but I neither was informed of, nor ſaw any other. There are many tarantulas in Aſtrachan, which carry their young on their bodies about with them, where-ever they go. I have had many patients bit by them, but never had any difficulty to cure them, altho' the bite always produceth a very ſordid ulcer. There is another inſect which I muſt mention; that is the locuſt: It is about two inches and one half long, or three at moſt, of a whitiſh grey colour, and is accompliſhed with four wings. It is as big about the body as a ſilk-

worm.

worm. They appear about Aſtrachan in the end of July, or beginning of Auguſt, in ſuch numbers, that it is incredible. A ſouth-weſt wind conſtantly brings them like large clouds. Mr Hanway is miſtaken, when he ſays, that they come from W. N. W. The truth of this I aſſert, becauſe I obſerved them every year. Indeed I believe, that, when they are flying, and a north wind blows, they will proceed ſouth. They are a great plague to the inhabitants of Aſtrachan; for, where-ever they alight, they leave but few vegetables growing; however, they never were known to eat the leaves of melons. In the month of Auguſt I believe they copulate, and for a long time ſtick faſt together, but at no other time, as I have been informed. I believe that they generate in Cuban, Georgia, Circaſſia, and Aſtrachan; and I make no doubt of their generating in all the countries ſouth of theſe; but I ſuppoſe, that the extreme froſts in Ruſſia deſtroy them and their ſeeds. The Aſtrachanians endeavour to frighten them from their fields and gardens, by ſhooting, ringing bells, and making great noiſe, but I ſuſpect to little purpoſe; for I have known them alight in gardens, in ſpite of all oppoſition, and, before they decamped, would not have left any thing valuable green. When I ſailed on the Caſpian, I have ſeen an incredible number floating on the ſurface of the water, above 50 miles from ſhore. There are great numbers of

of ſmall tortoiſes about the banks of the Volga, not exceeding one foot in length, but they are not eaten by the inhabitants, becauſe they imagine they are poiſonous, though the cook, who went to Perſia with us, who was an Auſtrian, affirmed the contrary, and ſaid, that he had dreſſed them frequently.

CHAP. LX.

Concerning Minerals found about Aſtrachan, &c.

NORTH from Aſtrachan, about the diſtance of ſeven miles, the Ruſſians dig up a kind of earth, in a place on the weſt banks of the Volga, called *ſal litri*, a corruption of *ſal nitri*, and macerate it for ſome time in water; then they draw off the clear water, and, by adding ſoot and ſome quick lime, they evaporate the water, and make as good ſalt petre as can be made any where. They ſay, that this has been an antient city. I doubt not the truth of this, becauſe brick has been found frequently under ground, and money alſo, ſome of which, both ſilver and gold, I have ſeen, and am in poſſeſſion of ſome at preſent, though the characters are not, I believe, legible*.

* Some authors have given out, that the ſwallows about this

The men frequently find precious ſtones in digging this earth. Whether they have been loſt accidentally in former ages, or are natural minerals, I ſhall not diſpute; but I am certain, that ſome of them are quite rough, and of little value till they are poliſhed. One day I bought from a jeweller two unpoliſhed rough rubies, found there by a ſoldier, and two ſmall diamonds. The rubies weighed eight carats, and were without blemiſh: The diamonds weighed both but one carat, and were poliſhed. Theſe four ſtones were valued by the jeweller at five rubles: I agreed to give him the money next day, but Captain Tandefelt, a Swede, one of Governor Tatiſhoff's ſpies, went in and informed Mr Tatiſhoff, who ſent, unknown to me, for the jeweller, paid him the money, and kept the jewels. Indeed, when I challenged him for buying my jewels from a perſon who had no right to ſell them, he could give no reaſonable anſwer, but deſired, that I would let him keep them, and at the ſame time made me a preſent of a ring with a large amethyſt, but not very good. Many ſuch ſtones have been found at that place; and, though they have turned over the earth twice already, and, when

this place are of a different ſort from ours, and tie their young with hairs by the feet, leſt they fall out of their neſts. Dr Leuch and I made ſtrict ſearch about this, and I can affirm, that it is falſe. There is not the ſmalleſt difference, nor did we find any tied by the feet.

when I was there, were working the ſame earth the third time, yet they continue to diſcover both ſtones and pieces of ſilver and gold; but the metal has been wrought, and therefore it is no native of the place. There are very few freſh water lakes in the neighbourhood of the city, but a great many brakiſh, very ſalt, or even covered over with ſalt, like to ice: Upon ſome of them I have walked; and if the ſalt is broken any where upon the banks of the lake, where it is not deep, the moiſture beneath is black as ink, and emits a moſt diſagreeable noiſome ſmell, though the ſalt is of the beſt kind. In ſome exceeding brakiſh lakes, but not cruſted over, I have taken up ſmall cakes of the moſt excellent chryſtal ſalt. At the diſtance of 60 verſts ſouth-weſt from Aſtrachan, there is a large ſalt lake, about 50 verſts long and 20 broad, ſo thick cruſted over, that ſome hundred horſe and carts are conſtantly at work, carrying ſalt to be put on board veſſels riding in the Volga, not only for the uſe of the kingdom of Aſtrachan, but the greateſt part of the Empire of Ruſſia. This ſalt-men dig out of the lake with great iron gavelocks. There are two remarkable ſalt lakes immediately under the ſouth walls of Aſtrachan, always cruſted over in the ſummer ſeaſon. The ſalt is neither pure nor fine, but it has a redneſs in its colour, and ſmells ſtrongly of violets. Poſſibly it may receive that particular ſmell from the

the drains of the city running into the lakes, and volatilizing the ſalt. Our apothecary took a large quantity of it, and, by many ſolutions, filtrations and chryſtallizations, rendered it as pure as was poſſible; yet it retained the ſmell, though weaker by much, as alſo the reddiſh colour. This was ſent to the medicine chancery as a curioſity.

CHAP. LXI.

A Deſcription of the River Volga.

THE Volga takes its riſe in Novogorod-Velik, in the lake Troickoi, and further north in different places. It is joined by a canal to the river Mſta, as has already been ſaid. It has, beſides theſe, ſo many different ſources in different provinces, that it would be endleſs to deſcribe all its different heads; for it runs through ſuch a large tract of ground, and communicates with ſo many different rivers, navigable by ſmall craft, running from ſo many provinces, that it promotes trade and commerce to a greater extent of land than France, Spain, and Italy joined together: But the main body, running from Tweer to Aſtrachan, I imagine, if you compute the different turnings and windings, will meaſure about 3000 verſts, and, on the other ſide of Tweer, it cannot exceed 200 verſts;

verſts; and, adding 60 verſts betwixt Aſtrachan and the Caſpian ſea, its length, from its ſource to the ſea, is 3250 verſts. The Ruſſian corrected map will witneſs that I am not far from the truth, notwithſtanding Mr Hanway, according to his incorrect way, makes this river 4500 verſts. The main or principal ſtream of the Volga glides by the following cities and great mercantile towns: In its way betwixt Tweer and Aſtrachan, beginning from Tweer, Caſzin, Uglitz, Oreſtma, Koſtroma, Pavelofske, Niſni Novogorod, Kuzmudemianſk, Kazan, Sinbirſk, Samara, Alexeriſk, Sizran, Kaſzpor, Saratof, Demitzofske, Tſaritzin, Tchorna-yare, Sallitri, and Aſtrachan. I hope the reader will excuſe mentioning the above places, becauſe my deſign in doing this is purely for the uſe of paſſengers, that they may run no riſk of being impoſed upon, and have always plenty of proviſion and other neceſſaries. I have not mentioned the diſtances, becauſe, as I never navigated the river betwixt Tweer and Tſaritzin, I know them no other way but by meaſuring the map, which every one may peruſe. I have not ſpelled the names of the cities and towns the ſame way as thoſe who have written before me, as I hinted formerly, becauſe they have all been foreigners, who were not maſters of the Ruſſian language, and have ſpelled them ſo, that a Ruſſian would not underſtand what they meant; whereas, if any ſhall pronounce them,

as

as I have ſpelled them, the inhabitants can be at no manner of loſs, which is of the greateſt uſe to a ſtranger who is ignorant of the Ruſſian language.

At Tweer the Volga receives the Tweerka, which is only a branch of the Volga. In its paſſage to Aſtrachan, it receives the following remarkable rivers, upon which barks and large boats are navigated: Sekſna, Untza, Klyaſma, Okka, the Wjatha, and Biclaja, join and enter the Volga in one ſtream together with the Kama, Samara: Achtaba is only a branch of the Volga, which is caſt off at Tſaritzin, and thence proceeds to the ſea, frequently joining with each other, by detached ſtreams. Betwixt Aſtrachan and the ſea it is ſo divided, that its inhabitants, I am perſuaded, do not know all the iſlands and different ſtreams; but the principal ones keep near the weſt bank, and, at forty-five verſts diſtance from Aſtrachan, run by Earkee, a port belonging to the admiralty, for taking proper notice of veſſels outward or homeward bound; and beyond this, next the ſea, are four hills, which, in the Ruſſian language, are called Tchatire bugree, where paſſengers are detained in ſuſpicious times, to perform quarantine. On this however there are no proper houſes. The inhabitants of Earkee and Aſtrachan ſay, that the Volga diſembogues itſelf into the Caſpian by fifteen or ſixteen ſtreams; but, as I ſaid, they are not

very

very certain. I ſhall conclude my remarks about the Volga, by acquainting the reader, that, about the latter end of April, the river begins to ſwell every year, and continues to increaſe for five or ſix weeks, but begins to ſubſide about the latter end of June, and ſoon runs out by the tenth or twelfth of July. The overflowing of this vaſt river is cauſed purely by the melting of the ice and ſnow covering the immenſe ſpace, during the long winter, through which its various branches run; no other cauſe of rains having any perceptible effect at Aſtrachan, where it riſes in perpendicular height, above its ordinary level, eight or ten feet. It is true, at a greater diſtance from Aſtrachan, towards Ruſſia, in ſome places it riſes, above the common level, twenty feet and upwards; but this proceeds from the current being confined by high banks and lands; whereas at Aſtrachan, except a very few ſmall hills in the iſlands, there are no high lands on the eaſt as far as the eye can perceive any thing. Add to this, that the Volga is divided into ſo many large ſtreams, as has been already mentioned, that the water gets a free and unconfined paſſage into the Caſpian ſea. At no other fixed time in the year the Volga ſwells, and I never knew it ſwell by rains, which are very rare in Aſtrachan; but I have known it ſwell five or ſix feet perpendicular, by ſtrong winds blowing from the ſouth, if they continue three or four days;

days; and indeed it will ſwell as far up, or farther than Tſaritzin, which many think proceeds purely from the ſea-water, though I am of a different opinion. That the ſea-water greatly aſſiſts, I have no difficulty to grant; but then it is certain, that very high winds, blowing contrary to the ſtream for a long continued time, will ſtop its paſſage, in proportion to the ſtrength of the winds, and level of the country through which it runs; and the level of the country betwixt Tſaritzin and Aſtrachan is known to be very great, becauſe the waters do not run two miles in one hour, unleſs they are accelerated by north winds. Mr John Perry, that accurate engineer, makes the Volga to run ſomewhat faſter than one mile and an half in one hour. I was told by Mr Poſſet (a Frenchman, who kept the Empreſs's vine-gardens in order, of whom I ſhall have occaſion to make mention in the courſe of this work,) and many of the inhabitants affirmed, that it was true, that the Caſpian ſea roſe gradually high, and overtopped ſeveral low iſlands, and gradually decreaſed, leaving them dry every nineteen years. One would be apt to think, that this phænomenon might be cauſed by the moon; but as I intend to purſue my travels cloſely and briefly, I ſhall leave this to be canvaſſed by aſtronomers. There are very few cities in the kingdom of Aſtrachan. Kamſhinka and Saratoff, neither of which I ever ſaw, Tſaritzin, Tchornayar,

nayar, and Aſtrachan, are the only cities, properly ſpeaking, in this kingdom. There was a new city built, at my leaving the place, betwixt Tchornayar and Aſtrachan, called Eanataiva Crepuſt; now Chircaſſia is joined to the kingdom of Aſtrachan, of which Kizleer is the capital; but as I ſhall have occaſion to deſcribe that country in my journey to Perſia, I ſhall ſay no more about it at preſent.

CHAP. LXI.

Of the Garriſon and Government of Aſtrachan.

THE garriſon of Aſtrachan conſiſts of ſix regiments, five of infantry and one of dragoons. The immediate chief commander of the garriſon is the commandant, who is commonly a brigadier, though I have known a colonel, but then he cannot command a ſenior colonel: But orders iſſued from, and in the name of the cantoir or office belonging to the garriſon, where all their affairs are tranſacted by all officers of ſuperior rank, muſt be obeyed. Each regiment has a ſeparate hoſpital, though in very bad condition, as will be taken notice of in the ſequel. Beſides the proper garriſon, three or a greater number of field regiments commonly winter here, and 2 or 3000 Coſſacks, beſides the Tartar militia: For the Kalmucks are not, in Aſtrachan eſpecially, much to be truſted. The uſe of this regular garriſon is to keep watch about the city and citadel;

there are alſo a detached number of 3 or 400 ſent to Kizleer, and a few to Tchornayaz, but none to Tſaritzin: It being garriſoned by the field forces. The irregulars, are never made uſe of, but in conjunction with the regulars, and to ſcour the deſart in troubleſome times, and bring certain advice of the operations, places of reſort, and numbers of theſe wandering barbarians who diſturb their neighbours. This garriſon of Aſtrachan ſeems to have more fatigue, and no better pay than any other garriſon in Ruſſia: They are frequently obliged to march into the deſarts in the greateſt froſts, by which many are frozen to death, they are alſo obliged in the ſummer to fell and bring to Aſtrachan wood for the uſe of the garriſon hoſpitals, but chiefly for their officers, as alſo hay: This mal-practice will not be redreſſed till they get another ſovereign like Peter the Great. I was aſſured, and have ſome reaſon to believe it, that this garriſon one year with another, is recruited with 1500 men, and, that ſuch a loſs of men at Aſtrachan is peculiar only to the garriſon, I am certain, becauſe I have frequently compared the dead liſt of my hoſpitals belonging to the admiralty, who were kept in the beſt order, and had every thing required for the benefit of the ſick, whether medicines, eating and drinking, granted immediately with thoſe of the garriſon. When theſe poor recruits are ordered

to

to march for Aſtrachan, they are ſent by water to ſave charges, and the more effectually to keep them together. They therefore are ſent in the ſummer ſeaſon, and, by the time they arrive in Aſtrachan, the different fruits are all ripe, on which theſe poor half ſtarved creatures fly with great voracioufneſs, and in a very ſhort time, from a fiſh diet upon the Volga for ſix or eight weeks, a warm moiſt air ſtill increaſing as they advance nearer Aſtrachan, and being lodged in very ill contrived wet barracks, and ſurcharging all the veſſels in their bodies with fruits, which before their arrival they never had ſeen, far leſs eaten, they contract malignant quartans, and fluxes of all kinds, which very ſoon reduce their numbers to what I mentioned above. That this might be helped I have no doubt: But as I am not writing about medical affairs, I ſhall ſay no more of it here, leſt it may be diſagreeable to many of my readers, who will find in the end of this work many obſervations upon the wretched condition of the garriſon at Riga, over which I had the direction as well as of the army, and what ſtruggles I chearfully engaged in, and had ſome better order introduced before I left them, which very few inhabitants in Riga are ignorant of, and by which, I hope, the garriſon of that place reaps great advantages to this day.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXII.

Concerning the Commerce of Aſtrachan.

BEING, as I ſaid before, quite ignorant of mercantile affairs, I can only here give an account of the goods imported and exported to and from Aſtrachan: Its merchants from very different nations, not only reſide here for a time, but many are born in the place, and through length of time, ſeeing the advantages and privileges the Ruſſian merchants enjoy, which foreigners cannot, they very frequently declare themſelves ſubjects of Ruſſia, ſo that at preſent many Armenians, who, every one knows, are the natural ſubjects of either Perſia or Turkey, deny their allegiance to either of theſe mighty monarchies, and even, when they reſide for a time in either of theſe empires, boldly claim the protection of the Ruſſian ambaſſadors, reſidents, or conſuls. This being the caſe, I may certainly affirm that the produce of Perſia, Armenia, Georgia, India, Buchar, and Chiva, are imported by the Caſpian ſea from all theſe countries; ſuch as ſilks, ſattins, velvets, brocades, cotton cloaths of all denominations, jewels, ſome drugs, copper and many other things, together with Perſian wines, and variety of fruits and ſweet-

meats,

meats, confections, *&c.* From Ruſſia they tranſport to Perſia, and the other nations named above, but very few goods; becauſe many articles of the produce of Ruſſia are prohibited to be exported to theſe nations, though they are allowed to be exported to the different nations in Europe. Thus, iron, hemp, pitch, tar, gun-powder, ſalt-petre, ſulphur, flint-ſtones and every thing fit for ſhip-building and war, are reckoned contraband to be exported to any port in Perſia. Meal only but by the immediate permiſſion of the Court, is exported: Cloaths of different ſorts, woolen manufacturies, fiſh, ſalt and a few other things alſo are permitted to be exported; the Armenians are allowed indeed to tranſport European goods of all ſorts, except warlike and naval ſtores, but they muſt ſell none in Ruſſia, and muſt buy them with the produce of raw ſilks of the Perſian growth, or jewels.

The Aſtrachan merchants alone are allowed to have ſhips on the Caſpian ſea, and they generally have betwixt twenty and thirty for ſea ſervice, which they call heght boats. Theſe veſſels carry, one with another, one hundred tuns, but are built very flat like the Holland ſhips, and therefore are only fit for the coaſt; becauſe they cannot ſail, like the Britiſh, near the wind. Beſides theſe ſea veſſels, they have barks for navigating the Volga, barks of a monſtrous figure and ſize,

ſome

ſome of them are more than a hundred feet long, and about forty feet broad, but not much above four or five feet deep, quite flat bottomed, in theſe barks, they tranſport fiſh, ſalt, *&c.* to Ruſſia; they are warped up the river againſt the ſtream, which work neceſſarily requires many hands, not fewer than two hundred. It is true that theſe large barks have each one maſt, and a ſail of incredible breadth, for the maſt is not very long, but it is of no manner of uſe, unleſs the wind is very near right a-ſtern. I have been told that they go at the rate of forty or fifty verſts in one day againſt the ſtream and wind, if it is not very ſtrong: But they neither ſail nor warp in the night-time. Each bark is accompanied by three boats, one boat is conſtantly at the ſtern to receive the rope from the men who are warping, and as ſoon as they have received the whole length with its anchor, they run away a-head, to drop the anchor in a proper place, whilſt the ſecond boat is ready to deliver the rope to the men on board, and then falls down to the ſtern to receive the rope again: Before the half of this rope is warped into the ſecond boat, the third boat lies ready with a part of the rope it has fixed by an anchor, to be delivered on board the boats. Indeed, it is almoſt incredible how faſt by this method, the bark is warped, nor does ſhe ſtand ſtill one moment through the whole day, if the wind is not

very

very high; but if the wind is very high, they warp none till it is calmer. The warpers are all accommodated with a broad belt of leather, which lies on the right ſhoulder, and is brought under the left arm, to this is joined a piece of ſmall ſtrong cord with a knot at the end, the warper toſſeth the ſmall rope round the great one, and in an inſtant fixeth it, and moves forward as faſt as they can go, and when they have reached the ſtern of the bark, they immediately diſengage themſelves, and return to the head. It is ſurpriſing how expeditiouſly and regularly they perform this work. I have been told that if pirates board their barks they call out, and let them know that they are pirates, and order them to fall down on their faces and lie in that poſture, till the pirates are gone. They accordingly obey, for they do not love fighting, and the pirates take what they ſtand in need of, and depart without injuring either the men or bark, but if any look up when the pirates are on board, they run the riſque of being inſtantly killed; and if they fight with the pirates, and are overcome, no quarter will be granted, leſt they be diſcovered. The Armenians however fight very bravely, and the pirates do not altogether reliſh a combat with them, unleſs they are very numerous, and well provided with arms.

Before I make an end of this chapter, I cannot paſs by a piece of hiſtory which happened

pened this year with the pirates, who were ſaid to have been about two thouſand ſtrong, and very well provided with good arms. They were ſo bold as to attack, and murder all who made reſiſtance, and not ſatisfied with plundering paſſengers on the river, they carried off from the neighbouring villages whatſoever they ſtood in need of. The Court having been duly informed of this ordered a regiment of dragoons to march againſt them, commanded by a Ruſſian colonel: The colonel, not ſuſpecting any danger near, eſpecially as he was marching againſt irregular banditti, drove forward for the conveniency of lodging, and left his regiment to march ſlowly after him, commanded by his lieutenant colonel. Long before he came near the place where they ſuſpected the pirates to be, one day ſoon after, the colonel had taken up his lodging, and was reposing himſelf on a bed, a fellow entered the room, and aſked him if he was the commander in chief of the regiment? The colonel ordered him out of his preſence; but, inſtead of complying, he called out to his companions, who entered the room in great numbers, and moſt imperiouſly ſtripped the colonel, and whipped him moſt unmercifully, ordered him back, though he was all over covered with blood, to attend his regiment, and tauntingly told him, that what he had ſuffered was only a ſmall puniſhment, for

not

not underſtanding his duty; therefore adviſed him not to part again with his regiment on a march, but added he would do well to adviſe his ſuperiors, that many ſuch regiments would find it a hard task to reduce ſuch a number of brave well-diſciplined fellows as they were. In this however they were miſerably miſtaken; for the governor of Cazan, having been informed of what had happened to the colonel, ordered the brave Innes, of whom mention has been made formerly at the ſiege of Otchakoff; Mr Innes took a very different method of marching, and loſt no time to come up with them, and as ſoon as poſſible he diſpatched ſome ſenſible truſty ſpies mounted on good horſes, and dreſſed as peaſants, and he took care to paſs all cities and great villages on the river in the night-time, through bye-roads, and, by this cautious way, he came within a ſmall diſtance of the place where they were, and was well informed that the pirates imagined themſelves in very great ſafety, and were carouſing and making very merry at the expence of the former unfortunate colonel; that they were ſo far from expecting any danger that they were encamped on the banks of the Volga, and not on any of the iſlands, which they conſtantly do, when they dread any danger, and that their boats were at anchor hard by them. The colonel drew his men as near as he could, to prevent his being diſcovered, and ſent his ſpies on foot to watch their motions: At

 laſt,

laſt, word was brought, near the morning, that they were probably ſleeping, as every thing in their camp was quiet. The colonel encouraged his men, who loved him much, to obey command with exactneſs, and declared, that all his ſhare of booty ſhould be given to the dragoons: Then he ordered one party to ride up the banks of the river, and another to ride down the banks; that theſe two parties ſhould endeavour to get betwixt them and their boats, and, at the ſame time, ſend off a few of the beſt ſwimmers to ſecure the boats. Whilſt this was tranſacting, he, with a conſiderable diviſion, marched ſtraight upon them to prevent their getting into the woods, and in this manner, I was informed, he ſurrounded them, and took poſſeſſion of their boats. He ordered his men inſtantly to fall on the main body, which they executed with great briſkneſs; many were killed as they lay ſleeping, but many got their arms, and fought with ſurpriſing reſolution and conduct. At laſt however, they were reduced to a very few, and moſt of them wounded, who, for the love of living a few days longer in the greateſt of miſery and many torments, and at laſt the moſt cruel of deaths, rendered themſelves priſoners to the victorious colonel, by whom they were ſent to Caſan, tried by the governor, and executed, by hanging them up by the ribs alive, upon gibbets fixed upon floats. Five or ſix men were thus hang-

ed

ed upon one float, upon each of which written orders were pasted on the most conspicuous places, commanding, that if the floats should perhaps be intangled, and so stopped from going down with the stream, whoever should happen to see them, should push them off again; and that whoever should be known to give the pirates any help or relief, should be punished with death in the same manner.

When a report of this transaction reached St Petersburgh, every one applauded the conduct and bravery of Mr Innes, except some rich Lords at court, whose villages, as has been said, had been plundered by these banditti. They accused Mr Innes of granting the spoil to the dragoons, being, as they said, the property of their innocent peasants. They insisted on having Mr Innes brought to a court-martial, and tried for the same. I was informed, that orders were either making or made out for this purpose, when the news of the brave Innes's death prevented any further enquiry. How far Mr Innes was right or wrong, I shall not take upon me to determine: Nor shall I assert, whether any set of people, who have suffered by such a respectable body of villains, if I may be allowed to use such an expression, have any better right than others to be indemnified for their loss; nor how it could well be possible to ascertain that loss, considering that many things had been

been ſold, embezzled, or otherways rendered inviſible. But ſure none could ſay, that the colonel had any gain by it; and as ſure he meant to act for the beſt; and, tho' he might have very good reaſons to put great truſt in the bravery and reſolution of his men, it cannot be denied, that, where intereſt is in view, it gives additional reſolution to the beſt troops in the world. Though it were poſſible to imagine a body of 1500 men capable of being quite diſintereſted, yet the thoughts of their fighting and expoſing their lives to imminent danger, purely to enrich, if victorious, the minions of a court, would naturally damp their ardour; and, when ſuch practice is continued, it never fails to have that effect, and frequently worſe conſequences, even the total ſubverſion of government. Thus fell the brave Innes, the ſoldier's friend, and beloved of all good men, whoſe loſs was juſtly regreted by all the armies of Ruſſia. I neither ever had the honour of his acquaintance, nor any of his relations; and therefore, what I write is intended purely to do juſtice to the memory of a man, who deſerved a far better fate.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXIV.

Concerning the Occurrences which happened during the Author's first abode in Astrachan.

IT is easy to be conceived, that after our arrival, the singular parental-like behaviour of the Governor and his Lady to me, caused every one believe, that I was no small favorite; and therefore I was not a little caressed by all degrees of the inhabitants. Some wanted to make me an advocate in their affairs, by promises and presents, which I rejected with such disdain, that I was very soon eased of a great deal of trouble.

The ice went off the day after our arrival; and, in a few days thereafter, the Governor and his family went by water to see a silk-worm shade, which an Armenian merchant had, by his knowledge and industry, produced about two or three years ago. As the method of propagating silk is very well known, I shall say nothing of it here, but that the Armenian had planted the garden with mulberries four or five years before this, in less than two acres of ground; and he said, that he hoped this year would produce near a bale of good silk, and that in the year 1739, this infant factory had produced more than half a bale. The mulberry-trees were but very young, but the Armenian

menian got ſome aſſiſtance of mulberry leaves from other gardens. I overheard them ſaying, that the great Emperor Peter had planted a mulberry-garden, for the propagating of ſilk-worms, at no great diſtance from this place. At our return, I, thinking that I was very ſoon to depart from this city, propoſed to viſit the imperial ſilk-factory, not doubting that I would ſee it in much greater perfection, as it was firſt begun in Peter the Great's time. That I might meet with no hindrance or ſtop, I ſaid nothing to any of the Governor's family, but privately cauſed my ſervant hire a boat to conduct me to this factory. Accordingly, at the diſtance of two verſts from Aſtrachan, I was landed on a very pleaſant iſland, on the top of which, near the middle, was built a very long houſe, or rather a long line of houſes, with gardens on the north ſide, which, I was told, was the factory. Thither I went, in great hopes of being very agreeably entertained; but how much was I diſappointed, when, in this great building, I only found a poor woman, and ſome miſerable children, who told me, that her huſband was gone a-fiſhing for their dinner; that the great ſilk-work of Peter the Great was reduced to eight or nine worms, only to keep up the name of it, and give bread to this poor, lazy, indolent, and ignorant family of beggars; but I underſtood, that an annual ſum, allotted by Peter for propagating ſilk-worms,

pretty

pretty conſiderable, was appointed for the relief of ſome court beggars.

CHAP. LXV.

Concerning what happened in the Year 1740 at Aſtrachan.

I Began to prepare for my departure for St Peterſburgh: The Prince however encouraged my ſtay a little longer. At laſt, about three weeks after our arrival in Aſtrachan, one morning as I paid my reſpects to the Prince, and was fully determined to ſollicit my paſſport, the Governor put an Imperial decree from the medicine-chancery into my hand, and congratulated me by ſaying, that he was glad the chancery had given me a ſuperior rank, by conſtituting me principal ſurgeon in the port of Aſtrachan, in the place of Mr Silveſter Malloch my countryman, and commanding all the ſurgeons in the fleet, garriſon and army, when they had no principal, or general ſurgeons in that kingdom, to take directions from me, and report regularly to me every month.

Though it is very natural for mankind to be very fond of fame, and of being preferred to places of honour and truſt, eſpecially when this is effected purely by merit; and though I deny not, that I was much pleaſed that the medicine-

medicine-chancery took ſuch ſingular notice of me, who, without any ſollicitation, had advanced me, though I had only ſerved four years, to be director to many very able ſurgeons, who had ſerved the greateſt part of their lives; yet I thought I could perceive that this had been effected by ſome ſecret ſervices of the Governor, and made free not to tell him as much; and added, that his Highneſs might eaſily think how diſagreeable it muſt be to any man to have all his hopes at once fruſtrated, and that by people of whom he had deſerved better treatment.

The Prince, ever the ſame man, ſmiled, and told me, that he had indeed wrote to his friend the archiator, returned him thanks for ſending me to have the care of him and his command, and warmly obſerved the care I ever had taken of all the ſick intruſted to me, and particularly of the advice I had given to defend the people under his command from the plague, at a time when our very near neighbours were ſuffering ſo much. He ſaid, that he had prevailed upon me to attend the Princeſs and two of her ſick children to Aſtrachan, and could not help expreſſing ſome uneaſineſs at being obliged to part with me there: And laſtly, that he had intreated the archiator to ward off any reproof which I might be liable to from the admiralty, by ſome order from the chancery approving of what I had done; and concluded by ſaying,

that

that he indeed thought the archiator had ſent this order for theſe reaſons; but that, as he had brought me to Aſtrachan, he would uſe all his power and policy to get me removed, whenever it ſhould pleaſe heaven to remove himſelf; having ſaid this, he put a letter from the archiator to him, in Latin, into my hands, and retired to buſineſs of more conſequence.

When I had read the archiator's letter, I could entertain no manner of doubt that the Prince had told me the truth; eſpecially when I conſidered the whole conduct of this illuſtrious perſon, which was ever directed by honour and truth. I next peruſed the ukanſe, or imperial order, and by it obſerved, that, about twenty years before this, the plague had made very great havock in Aſtrachan, and therefore required that I ſhould, with the greateſt diligence, take all care to prevent this diſeaſe from appearing again, and immediately report to the chancery my having received the imperial decree, and what I found neceſſary to be done to prevent the plague being brought into that country. In this order I was informed, that the medicine-chancery, by a memorial of the ſame date, had given notice to the college of admiralty, that I was appointed by the hoſpital in Aſtrachan, in the place of the principal ſurgeon Malloch, and requiring the college to cauſe the commander of the port receive me in that capacity, and to give notice of the ſame to every

one concerned ; laſtly, to diſmiſs Mr Malloch from the admiralty's ſervice, who was to be employed in St Peterſburgh.

I conſidered Mr Malloch's intereſt. He was married, and had a wife and children ; I therefore ſuppoſing that he might not know of this, and, unprepared, might receive orders to march from Aſtrachan to St Peterſburgh in three days warning, with his family, (ſuch poſitive and peremptory orders being frequently iſſued, many of which I have, to my very great loſs, experienced ;) I for theſe reaſons, without loſs of time, went to Mr Malloch, and ſhewed him the orders I had juſt received, no doubt thinking it would give him great joy to go to St Peterſburgh, and time to ſell off all his houſehold furniture to the beſt advantage ; but in this I was very much miſtaken. I preſently ſaw his colour go and come, and, from a chearful ſereneneſs, he was quite over-clouded, nor could he hide the confuſion he was in from the moſt ignorant perſon, although he would gladly have made me believe that he was quite ſatisfied. In ſhort, that very evening, he had intereſt enough with the officers, by the fleet, to get a courier diſpatched to St Peterſburgh, without loſs of time ; and, it was ſaid, with very reſpectable preſents to the gentlemen of the quill, who, though many of them have ſuffered even death for taking bribes, beſtirred themſelves effectually in his cauſe. They

found

found it however quite impoſſible to retain him by the admiralty-hoſpital, but conſtituted him chief ſurgeon over the garriſon-hoſpital, and thoſe of marching regiments, commanding that he and I ſhould monthly communicate to one another whatever happened remarkable in our ſeparate commands; and that if any infectious alarming fevers ſhould happen, in ſuch a caſe, we were to loſe no time in conſulting together; and immediately, by written reports, to acquaint the government and admiralty, what we thought moſt proper to be done, and to ſend a ſuccinct report of every thing to the medicine-chancery.

Although the medicine-chancery had been very expeditious, the admiralty writers kept back the orders from being ſent, eighteen months, as will afterwards appear. In the mean time, I had nothing to do but give attendance to my private patients, and, though I got no ſalary till orders were diſpatched from the admiralty for that purpoſe, yet at laſt I received every farthing; and, having ſpare time, made double that ſum by my private patients.

In the month of May, when the air was very ſerene and extremely hot, being invited, I went a-hunting with many gentlemen, and the Prince's two eldeſt ſons. The heat, being greater than any I had ever experienced, obliged me to let down the brims of my hat, and take off my periwig. At our return,

only

only the Governor's children and I, out of the whole company, who were not accuſtomed to ſuch hot air, complained of a pungent pain, heat, and itchineſs in our faces; but my head, being cloſe ſhaved, and ſhoulders, were as bad as my face. The Princeſs anointed her children with freſh butter, but I took no great notice of it: However, next day they were much better, but I ſuffered a ſmart *eryſipelas* on all theſe parts, and at laſt loſt the *epidermis*, which prevented my hunting, except in a morning very early, before the heat grew to great height. I uſed frequently, in a morning, to go in company with the Governor's eldeſt ſon, to ſhoot. One morning we went to a moraſs betwixt a riſing ground and the Volga, on the banks of which many Kalmucks had formed a camp. As there was a great ſcarcity of water-fowl, we thought proper to ſeparate, to no great diſtance however. I unknowingly approached a hollow place, where many dogs were making a breakfaſt on a dead Kalmuck. The dogs inſtantly attacked me; I fired my gun among them, but, though I killed one, it had no effect in frightening the reſt; I therefore was obliged, with my clubbed fowling piece, to keep them off, by turning round, which exerciſe I could not have performed long, if the young Prince had not perceived my danger, and reſcued me by firing among them. In the mean time, I loaded, whilſt they ſurrounded

rounded him, and gave them one other discharge, which diminished their number, and possibly wounded others. After this they fled to their masters, and we returned home, both in great fright.

In the afternoon, in company with some young officers, to whom we had related this affair, we went upon the banks of the Volga, and, with our pistols, did not leave a Kalmuck dog alive within two miles of Astrachan*.

The Prince I mentioned above, was the same who lately was minister from Russia to the Court of Great Britain, and, at present, I am agreeably informed, is vice-chancellor to the Empire of Russia. Prince Alexander, for that is his name, was then indeed a most promising youth; wherefore, I am not surprised at his present elevation, for he was early and effectually taught the beauty of virtue and the deformity of vice, had naturally noble sentiments, which were improved and brought to perfection by the great example of his illustrious parents.

* I mention this trifling affair, that the reader may see how dangerous it is to go near these dogs accustomed to eat human bodies. It may appear trifling to some, and very useful to others.

CHAP. LXVI.

A Continuation of what happened in the Year 1740.

ABOUT the month of June, the brave Kalmuck Prince Donduk Ambo died, it was ſaid, of a fever. The Ruſſian court now intended to appoint one named Donduk Daſchee, Prince over the Kalmucks. They had kept him in Caſan many years in a princely manner, had careſſed him much, with a view to get him ſo far in the intereſt of Ruſſia, as to perſuade the Kalmucks to live in cities and villages on the banks of the Volga, and no more wander about the deſart in tents.

Donduk Ambo's lady, a Circaſſian by birth, deſcended of one of the moſt illuſtrious families in Circaſſia, was of a different opinion. She had five children to Donduk Ambo, and very naturally wiſhed that her children ſhould ſucceed their father; and therefore at preſent ſummoned all the Kalmuck chiefs to attend at her tent. They frankly enough eſpouſed her cauſe, and determined to keep near her perſon. It was ſaid, at this time, that ſhe had a body of at leaſt 40,000 men, all warriors, who had been tried under the orders of the late Donduk Ambo. She encamped on the weſt ſide of the Volga, over-

againſt Aſtrachan, till the beginning of Auguſt, and then marched through the deſart ſouth to the borders of Circaſſia, where they wintered, and where I now leave them till next year.

In the month of Auguſt, one named Anaſtatius, a Greek merchant, arrived in Aſtrachan from Buchara: He gave privately an account to the Governor, that, under pretence of going to trade in different parts of Tartary, for which purpoſe he had obtained proper paſſports from Kuli Khan, who, he ſaid, had conquered Buchara and Chiva, which indeed was very true. He ſaid, that Kuli Khan had cauſed make a very ſtrict enquiry among the merchants who were acquainted with the deſarts betwixt Chiva and Aſtrachan, about the diſtance, water, proviſions, the nations who inhabit theſe deſarts, and wanted to know if it was poſſible to march a great army from thence to Aſtrachan; and he, Kuli Khan, further enquired of Anaſtatius many things concerning the forces and ſtrength of Aſtrachan. I ſay, under pretence of going into different parts of Tartary, Anaſtatius obtained a paſſport from the Shach, but, as ſoon as he thought himſelf to be out of danger of being taken by any Perſian party, he directed his courſe ſtraight to Aſtrachan, to acquaint the government of their danger. The governor was well ſatisfied that no truſt was to be put in the friendly meſſages which were frequently

frequently ſent to Ruſſia by that tyrant; as for honour, he never laid claim to any. At this time the Shach had an ambaſſador at the court of Ruſſia, and was ſending two who were in Kizlaar with twenty elephants, and many valuable preſents to the Empreſs and her miniſters, being part of the ſpoils he had taken from the Great Mogul. But all theſe ſigns of friendſhip ſignified very little, ſince it was very well known, that, upon the pretence of friendſhip, he had frequently invaded his neighbour's countries, and not only deſtroyed all the beſt of the natives, but effectually ruined theſe countries, and gave up the ſubjects to the moſt unparalleled cruelties; and all the women, without diſtinction, to ſatisfy the luſt of his brutal army. Soon after Aſtanatius had brought this true information, it was corroborated by many others, who had fled from the cruelties of the monſtrous Kuli Khan. He had marched his army againſt Buchara in the year 1740; the Prince of which country, finding himſelf unable to ſtand out againſt ſuch a numerous army of devils, cauſed open the gates of his capital and the other cities belonging to him, and ſued for mercy, which for once was granted, alledging that the Prince of Buchara was the true deſcendent of Mahomet, and therefore ought to meet with adoration from all the true believers. Kuli Khan took nothing from this prince, but begged, that he would

would grant him one of his daughters, that he might raiſe up a progeny of the deſcendents of Mahomet, who might in after ages ſway the ſceptre of Perſia. This favour was eaſily obtained. From Buchara he marched directly for Chiva; but theſe brave ignorant people did not properly receive him, but upbraided him in the groſſeſt manner, which raiſed his paſſion to ſuch a height, that he ſat down before their city, and in a ſhort time made very many large breaches in the walls, and particularly overthrew one very ſtrong battery, in which the deluded inhabitants placed their greateſt hopes. When he was giving the neceſſary orders, and making diſpoſitions for an immediate aſſault, the inhabitants begged for mercy, and opened their gates. The Shach, at this time proceeding with good policy, ordered ſtrong guards to take poſſeſſion of the gates, and, by ſound of trumpets, diſcharged any of his army to enter the city, or in any ſhape moleſt the natives or foreign merchants, who might be found there: He next cauſed a ſtrong party enter the city, patrole the ſtreets, and place ſafeguards at the gates of all the caravanſeras in it, forbidding either natives or foreigners, on pain of death, to appear in the ſtreets, till further orders. Next he cauſed ſeize the Khan and his counſellors, whoſe heads were chopped off. Next day he declared a general pardon, and permitted foreigners to bring their

presents to his camp. This account I had from a countryman who was present, and believe every word to be true.

After he had conquered these inhabited countries, he could proceed no farther for desarts infested by wandering hoards of Tartars, which inhabited the desarts betwixt him and Astrachan; and understanding from every person, who knew these desarts, that it would be quite impossible to march his army thro' them, he garrisoned Chiva, and the other towns belonging to that principality, with a numerous body of men, and returned into Persia by the way of Astrabat, Mezanderan, Casbin and Ardevil, with a design, as was given out, to punish the rebellious Lesgee Tartars: Of which expedition, and his success, I shall give the history in a more proper place.

CHAP. LXVII.

Continuation of what happened in the Year 1740.

UPON being well assured of the truth of Anastatius's information, the careful Governor lost no time in acquainting the court, and in causing strong lines to be drawn round the south of Astrachan, at the distance of one verst from the city, well strengthened with batteries, upon which cannon were fixed. He sent into the desart many parties of dragoons

dragoons and irregulars, to watch the motions of whoever paſſed theſe deſarts, and to bring him all intelligence. He diſpatched orders to the reſident and conſul in Perſia, requiring them to ſpare no coſt to get all the intelligence poſſible of the deſigns of Kuli Khan.

In the latter end of July, nineteen elephants arrived on the weſt banks of the Volga, with an ambaſſador called Huſſein Khan, and a great number of attendants, in their way to St Peterſburgh. The principal ambaſſador, Sadar Khan, a great favourite of the Shach, died of a flux at Kizlaar, and the one who came with the elephants, wanted much to have wintered in Aſtrachan, threatening to return to his maſter in caſe of a denial; but the Governor let him know, that in Aſtrachan there was neither proviſion nor conveniencies for his retinue, being five hundred men and elephants; that he was at full liberty, either to proceed on his way to St Peterſburgh, or return, when he ſhould be eſcorted with four regiments of dragoons under the orders of Major general Apraxin, who had convoyed them from Kizlaar to this place. The only liberty which this ambaſſador could obtain, was to be permitted to go into a bagnio with a few of his followers. During his ſtay in Aſtrachan, (which was only a few hours,) all care was taken, that neither Perſians nor Tartars were permitted to go to him, except ſuch in whom the Governor could confide,

and

and who had their inſtructions given them, I went over the river to ſee theſe monſters, in company with the field-apothecary, and as we could not ſpeak with the Perſians, and the dragoons being at ſome diſtance from the elephants, becauſe the horſes were terrified for them, we went to one who ſeemed to be the largeſt, with two ſmaller female ones, one on each ſide. They were all chained by the hinder legs with ſtrong iron chains. The male elephant made great noiſe, and with his trunk ſtruck the ground ſo very ſtrongly, that we thought the earth trembled. Little did we know the danger we were in, nor the reaſon of all this paſſion, when a little Indian got up, from among the hay which the beaſts were eating, with a lance in his hand, made ſigns for us to retire, ſpoke angrily to the elephant, and then thruſt the ſpear many times into his ſides. At laſt, after he had thus puniſhed him, he again ſpoke, but the beaſt did not ſeem to reliſh this treatment, wherefore he began again to wound him with a very broad ſpear, when at length the monſter made a particular kind of noiſe, and laid his left fore leg outward, upon which the Indian crept, till he got on his back, from whence he moved forward, till he was ſeated right behind his ears; then he took an ax, ſuch as we break ſugar with, only on the oppoſite ſide to the cutting edge, was a pike about a finger-length, with which he beat the beaſt on

the

the head, and ſpoke to him betwixt every blow, till he had puniſhed him ſufficiently. A man paſſing by, who ſpoke the Ruſſian and Indian language, told us, that we had been in great danger, and that the beaſt was very angry that we approached ſo near the females; that this elephant was the only one in the number, who was not as yet rightly tamed, and therefore very dangerous. This was not ſaying much for the natural ſagacity of the elephant, though ever ſo wild, to be jealous of the apothecary and me with his miſtreſſes; but, on the other hand, it is certain, that thoſe who are well tamed, and uſed with mankind, do behave in a very extraordinary manner. An inſtance of which, for the entertainment of the reader, I'll venture to give as I was informed by General-major Apraxin. It is this:

When they went out of Kizlaar, many of the inhabitants went to ſee the elephants; among the reſt was a ſelf-ſufficient proud prieſt, ſtrutting with great ſtatelineſs to expoſe his importance to the common people. This clod of pride the general ſpied, and privately ſent one of his ſervants to deſire the governor of a very large elephant, but quite tame and docile, to frighten the prieſt without hurting him. At the Indian's pronouncing the word of direction, the elephant reared his long trunk in the air, made a great noiſe, and approached the prieſt. The multitude fled, but

but the elephant kept close to the priest, who fled into the desart. As he passed near a large pit made for catching wild beasts (which will be described when I arrive in Circassia) about eight or nine feet deep, he ran to it, and jumped in, there thinking he would be safe. The beast followed, and immediately, I suppose as directed, threshed on each side of the pit, which was loose ground, so violently, that the earth tumbled down upon him; wherefore, he was obliged to scramble up, lest he had been buried alive. However, when he was very tired, and effectually frightened, the elephant went away, and the priest was carried home, as was reported, in a very homely stinking condition, nor did he recover his fright soon.

I saw these creatures go away, conveyed by four regiments: They moved from the south side of a hill, northward, up the banks of the Volga. It is incredible how frighted the Russian horses were for them, the stoutest dragoons could not command them to go near. On the back of one of the largest tame elephant, they had a machine fixed, where two or three men could sit, railed about. I was told, that the ambassador, in company with one or two more, used sometimes, in a pleasant day, to sit there for a day's journey. Although, as has been observed, their chains were very weighty, yet they dragged them with great ease; and their ordinary walk requires

quires an ordinary horſe to trot, to keep pace with them. As that animal is ſo well known, I ſhall ſay no more about it at preſent.

CHAP. LXVIII.

The Author treats of the different anecdotes as they happened in the courſe of this year.

I Had been in Aſtrachan about two or three weeks, when one afternoon Paſtor Wiſe payed me a viſit: He aſked me, If I was of the reformed religion? I anſwered him in the affirmative. He ſaid that he had been informed ſo, and told me that he rejoiced at it, and ſaid he doubted not that I adhered to the kirk of Scotland. I ſaid I did, and at preſent believed I ſhould not change, tho' I began to entertain a very good opinion of the church of England. He ſaid that of the two he loved or eſteemed the kirk beſt, but that he alſo had a very great opinion of the purity of the doctrine of the church of England; and that the Engliſh church had produced ſome of the moſt learned divines in the world. Then he aſked me, Why I had not been at church ſince my arrival in Aſtrachan? I ſaid, that I underſtood the German language very imperfectly, nor did I know the method of worſhip in their church, never having

having once been in any, that I ſcarcely could read the German print, and that I looked upon every one, who pretended to join in divine worſhip with others whom they did not underſtand, to be hypocrites. He begged I would entertain no ſuch opinion, that I would come to church, and made me a preſent of a German bible, ſaying, that if I read it frequently, God would aſſiſt me ſoon to underſtand the language, and, without giving me time to return an anſwer, immediately kneeled down, and prayed. He was, I dare ſay, a very good man; but a great enthuſiaſt. I accepted of his bible, and indeed ſoon learned the German language, but this was owing to my daily keeping company with the Germans in Aſtrachan.

Mr Wiſe told me, that he had been preacher to Count Muinich, but that, at the earneſt deſire of Brigadier Younger, and the gentlemen belonging to the garriſon, he came there: But ſaid, that it was expected the brigadier would ſoon leave this place, and, when that ſhould happen, he would go with him; becauſe Colonel Pile, the eldeſt officer belonging to the garriſon, bore him a grudge, nor had paid him his ſalary, according to his ſubſcription, for one year bypaſt, and that many others had done the ſame thing; becauſe he had reproved him for ſeizing the effects belonging to one of Prince Dolgaruka's family, after his death, though he had left

a wife

a wife in no very opulent circumſtances. He ſaid, that the Prince had a great liking to the colonel's lady, and that ſhe had, in his laſt days, perſuaded him to this, and that he had granted a will in her favour, in prejudice of his own wife, which he thought not only diſgraced themſelves, but would have brought a reproach on the foreigners, if he had not burnt the will, and ſo forced them to deliver up the Prince's effects to his widow. I aſked him, How he attempted to burn the will? or how he got poſſeſſion of it? He ſaid, that foreigners were ſo univerſally ſcandalized on this account, that he went to the houſe and expoſtulated with them; but finding that this ſerved only to inflame them againſt him, he deſired to ſee this will, that he might ſay whether it was genuine: Accordingly the will was produced, and when Madam had gone into another room, he committed it to the fire in preſence of the colonel, who was ſo old and ſtiff that he could not reach the re till it was conſumed: And this finiſhed, and ſaid, he preſently withdrew, and never entered the houſe again. They ſwore revenge, but were obliged to reſtore every thing belonging to the deceaſed Prince; and hitherto the brigadier had protected him. Of this I gave our governor a very ſuccinct account, who next day ſent, and deſired the paſtor would dine with him: He ſent alſo for the colonel, and after dinner gently ſpoke of

that affair, and told Mr Wiſe, that if any, in either garriſon or army, had ſigned a call for him to come as parſon to Aſtrachan, and had annexed a certain ſum of money: And if, at any time, any of theſe officers refuſed to pay the ſum they had voluntarily ſubſcribed; upon Mr Wiſe's complaint, he would order payment immediately, and a ſtop to be put to their ſalary till all was clear. He told him alſo, that he would protect him, and every honeſt man, as long as he governed that kingdom, let their religion be what they pleaſed. The governor pronounced this ſentence with ſuch a determinate countenance, that next day the poor parſon got all his demands paid up: But the colonel and apothecary ſwore they never would enter the church as long as Mr Wiſe was there; which oath was alſo broken, when the apothecary buried his ſon. By their rules, the dead body is brought into church, when a ſhort ſermon upon ſuch occaſions is preached before burial: In that ſermon, the paſtor laſhed them very ſeverely before the whole congregation. He ſaid, that men that had bound themſelves by oath never to enter the church ſo long as paſtor Wiſe preached there, but God had determined that they ſhould enter the church either dead or alive. He ſaid, that whoever were ſo fooliſh as to make ſuch promiſes, did not attend to the will of God, who it was evident, by the melancholy example before us,

was

was determined to bring them upon ſuch occaſions, and adviſed them rather to walk into the church, as their duty required, or elſe God would cauſe them to be carried into this houſe when dead, and when it was dubious whether they had a chance for ſalvation. He, I thought, upon this occaſion, carried his reſentment too far, and, in place of cementing differences, made, as he well might have foreſeen, the breach not only wider; but provoked other people, and in ſhort was ſoon thereafter, in company with the good brigadier, obliged to leave Aſtrachan. I was informed that he went to Pruſſia, and was much careſſed in that kingdom.

CHAP. LXVIII.

Concerning Monſieur Pierre Poſſet and his Adventures.

I Had been but a ſhort time in Aſtrachan, when I was made acquainted with a French refugee called Pierre Poſſet, who gave me the following relation of his adventures. He was at that time about ſixty years of age; and Mrs Poſſet, both French, was fifty. Mr Poſſet ſaid, that when he was very young, his father was taken up and broken on the wheel, after he had ſuffered unheard of tortures; and a ſmall eſtate which belonged to their

their family was annexed to the crown of France, becauſe he openly profeſſed the Reformed Religion, nor would renounce it to the laſt. Mr Poſſet was, when his father ſuffered, nine or ten years old: He was his only child, and was ſent to a monaſtery, to be educated according to the Roman principles: But after the prieſts had half ſtarved him, whipped, and otherways tortured him, finding they could not prevail, they appointed him to work hard in their gardens daily under ſevere diſcipline: At laſt, however, he got an opportunity, and, in great danger, eſcaped. He ſaid, that as he had great reaſon to be diſſatisfied with their unheard of cruelties, he loſt no opportunity of doing them all the injury he poſſibly could during his ſtay there, which was about three years, and very ſeldom was ſuſpected. When he had eſcaped, he went begging thro' France, till he was preſſed into the King's ſervice, as a dragoon, where he ſerved till the King of France loſt a battle on this ſide the Alps. At which time, the Reformed, who were in the royal army, deſerted in a body, and fled into Tirol, and thence diſperſed through Germany and other countries. Poſſet took his road to Holland, from thence into England; betwixt which countries, having gotten ſome ſmall ſtock, and credit from the refugees in London, he traded ſome years, and married in Holland. At laſt, he went to

Ruſſia,

Russia, and, as sutler, he followed the Russian army to the siege of Asoph, which was the first expedition Peter the Great made against the Turks. When Asoph was taken, Posset had interest to be appointed, with a good salary, overseer of the vine-gardens in Asoph, and continued there till Asoph was again restored to the Turks, by the unfortunate treaty of the Pruith. During this time, Posset, who had knowledge in commerce, had made a pretty fortune: But inclined to go to Astrachan, where he was appointed principal over the Emperor's vine-gardens, by a contract during his life, by which he was to have good houses to dwell in, and the whole produce of the garden for his maintenance, except what fruits might be required by the Court, and forty men maintained at the Empire's expence to work in the garden, which garden was at least forty acres of the best ground.

Pierre was thus employed long before I arrived in Astrachan, and also continued in the same way when I left it; where he had made a very great fortune, and had a family of two sons and a daughter. His eldest son was lame, and died there, his second, Cornelius Posset was sent as sutler to Asoph, the last time it was besieged and taken, as has been already noticed, by the late ever victorious Field Marshal Count Lacy. Young Cornelius, who abhorred being a sutler,

ler, ſoon ſpent all the money his father had intruſted him with, which was the ſum of 2000 rubles. He gave credit indiſcriminately to all the officers who were in want, and only took their notes of hand. When he was reduced, and his father would not anſwer his demands, he entered into the army as volunteer. It was not long before he was advanced to the rank of ſerjeant, and, what is very remarkable three or four days preceeding the capitulation of Aſoph; he went a volunteer to the ſtorming of a breach three different times, and, agreeable to the Ruſſian regulations, every time he was advanced one rank higher; ſo that when the city capitulated, he was captain of dragoons, and in that quality marched with us to Perſia, in which expedition he behaved ſo well that he was advanced to a majority when we returned.

Old Poſſet in his younger days ſuffered much miſery, and, as he has frequently told me, eſcaped many imminent dangers: But one he eſcaped at Aſtrachan, which was well known to all the inhabitants, and which for its ſingularity, I think deſerves to be related, as it will I doubt not be agreeable to the reader.

I ſaid, that he had a good houſe in the vine-gardens. This houſe, in which he lived, was built of timber, two ſtories high, which formed one ſide of a ſquare, facing which

was

was another houſe, in which the labourers of the garden dwelt, and a large gate, which formed another ſide; ſtables and other neceſſary houſes made a third ſide, and the fourth was finiſhed with paliſadoes betwixt it and the garden. Poſſet was univerſally accounted one of the richeſt men in Aſtrachan, tho' he made no great ſhew of it: He was the principal banker in or about the city, and his houſe was well furniſhed with the beſt and largeſt quantity of ſilver-plate and porcelain.

One night, as they were going to bed, a violent knocking at the door ſummoned him to enquire into the cauſe. He was anſwered, that it was an expreſs from the Governor, requiring his immediate attendance in his palace, and that there was an order for him. Suſpecting no harm, he opened the door, and ſoon was made ſenſible, that he was at the mercy of a band of robbers, conſiſting of 40 men, armed with knives and bludgeons. They told him, that they had carefully ſecured his men by barricading the door, and placing ſtrong guards there, and alſo at the window; therefore deſired him, without further trouble, to give them all the money and value in his houſe. Poſſet, ſeeing there was no help, aſſured them, that, if they would ſpare his life and Mrs Poſſet's, he would inſtantly deliver to them every thing in his houſe. This was agreed to, and Poſſet kept his word, but they, not regarding their promiſe, moſt unmercifully

unmercifully beat both Mr and Mrs Poſſet, ſtripped her naked, and tied her to a tree in the garden, though it was extremely cold weather. They alſo tied Mr Poſſet's hands and feet together; and, as one of them was taking a long knife out of its ſheath, to cut his throat, whilſt he was putting up his ſupplications to heaven for the ſafety of his ſoul, all hopes of relief having vaniſhed, an old ſoldier, whom Poſſet kept to take care of the ſtoves, and do any little work about the houſe, had eſcaped the robbers ſearch in the garret; he made faſt the entry into the garret, and, from a window, called out, as if he had been directing a captain how he might diſpoſe of his men to catch all the robbers. The robbers overhearing that an effectual aſſiſtance was ſo near, in the greateſt conſternation and hurry, evacuated the houſe, and made their eſcape through the vine-garden. The ſoldier, ſeeing that the coaſt was clear, loſt no time in letting the labouring people out of their confinement, and releaſing Poſſet and his wife, almoſt frozen to death. The villains had carried off all his plate and money. Poſſet not thinking himſelf as yet ſecure, eſcorted by a few of his workmen, went to the city about half a mile diſtant, and applied to the commandant, who ſent a company of ſoldiers to watch his houſe. Another company was directed to patrole the ſtreets with great ſecrecy; while other ſoldiers, dreſſed

dreſſed as boors, were ſent into ſuch houſes as ſold liquor, with orders to ſecure all ſuch boors as changed rubles or ducats, for examination. Before noon next day, the greateſt part were taken, and Poſſet recovered almoſt every thing, though, no doubt, he was at ſome expence in employing ſo many people. The ſoldiers got little more than meat and drink, becauſe they are not allowed to take money for doing their duty. Theſe miſerable banditti, after the moſt exquiſite torture, finiſhed their wretched lives, by being broken on the wheel, or hung up by the ribs, till they expired, except a few who died in priſon. After this, Mr Poſſet never durſt live in the country, but retired to the city, where he was living when I left Aſtrachan, in the year 1748. Scarcely any thing is more agreeable to mankind than to know the manners, cuſtoms, or faſhions of different nations; and this curioſity prevails with the bulk of the human race all the world over, therefore the following need to ſurprize none.

Mr Poſſet was accuſtomed to hire from the Tartar Muzſas, a number of their men, in the ſpring time, to dreſs the vine-gardens, for he had fine gardens his own property, into which he never permitted the labourers belonging to the Empire to enter, leſt they might have accuſed him of employing them in dreſſing his own gardens, which would have riſked his forfeiting them: He therefore was well

acquainted with the Tartar Muzſas, who had been many years hoſpitably entertained in his, Mr Poſſet's, houſe; they therefore prevailed with him to go with Mrs Poſſet, in the ſummer-time, to their camp, to take a dinner, obliging themſelves to put no reſtraint on either of them, which the difference of religion, (they being all Mahometans) might have probably occaſioned. It is well enough known, that the Mahometans are very careful to keep themſelves very clean, by bathing, depilation, or taking off the hair which grows about the greater emunctories upon the body, and by frequent daily ablutions, particularly before and after repaſts. At Mr and Mrs Poſſet's arrival, dinner was ſerved up, conſiſting principally of mutton and fowls. After dinner was over, Mrs Poſſet expreſſed ſome deſire to viſit their wives, which was complied with. She accordingly was introduced into a large tent, where many of the Muzſas wives had aſſembled, no doubt to ſee and converſe with a Chriſtian, with whom they very rarely, if ever, had any correſpondence. The men had not long retired into their former tent, to converſe about their affairs, till they were alarmed with a great ſcreaming among the women, but Mrs Poſſet's voice was heard much louder than any of the reſt; whereupon Poſſet, forgetting that it was dangerous and very rude, immediately ran to, and, without any heſitation, entered the womens tent, where

he

he ſpied the Tartar women ſitting oppoſite to Mrs Poſſet, expoſing what modeſty requires ſhould be hid, and two of them wanted much to explore what Mrs Poſſet would have kept ſecret. Mr Poſſet immediately reſcued his wife, and the Tartars were no ways diſſatisfied with Poſſet's going into their wives tent. Mr Poſſet ſaid, that he frequently went and viſited the Tartars, but Mrs Poſſet never could be prevailed upon to repeat her viſits. The old woman acknowledged the truth of this. Hiſtorical examples, of themſelves not diſagreeable, ſerve not only to amuſe young readers, but more effectually to fix in their memories the cuſtoms and manners of countries, and, as it were, force them to learn geography better than any ſyſtem whatever; which is one reaſon why I ſometimes have related ſtories of themſelves not very intereſting, for which, I hope, the learned reader, if he has good principles, will pardon me.

CHAP. LXX.

Concerning different Affairs which happened this Year.

AS no orders were ſent from the admiralty, appointing me to take care of the ſick belonging to the port, I had much time on my

my hands, and thought it my duty to give my opinion about the proper way to prevent the plague from making its appearance in Aſtrachan. I therefore gave in a petition to the precawſe or government's chancery, and ſent a copy of it to the medicine-chancery, chiefly repreſenting, that we could not be free of the danger of getting the plague in ſuch a very hot kingdom as Aſtrachan, unleſs the inhabitants were ordered to keep every thing as clean and free from putrefaction as poſſible, both without and within doors, which I imagined would not be difficult to be done, if the following rules were carefully attended to. I obſerved that the common people buried their dead in the churchyards, both within and without the city, very ſuperficially, ſcarcely covering the coffin half a foot with earth; which, conſidering the looſeneſs of the ſoil, gave the greateſt chance to promote the diſeaſe we were ſo much afraid of; and that many were buried in churchyards not fenced about, ſo that horſes and carriages drove frequently over the graves, and, in this dry climate, rendered the earth finely pulverized, which was eaſily carried away by the firſt guſt of wind, expoſed the coffins to view a very few days after interment: That the noiſome ſmell, and a viſitation of the churchyards, would prove what I had aſſerted, to be true. I therefore deſired, that, without loſs of time, this might be altered, by ordering the church-

churchyards to be fenced in, or by preventing wheel'd machines or horſes ever to paſs through theſe places; and laſtly, to order the graves to be made very deep. I next repreſented the loathſome manner in which the Kalmucks expoſed their dead, not only in the neighbourhood of Aſtrachan, but under the walls of the city, where dogs, crows, and ſwine were daily to be ſeen feeding upon them, to the great ſhame and danger of a well regulated government. I therefore required, that, ſince it was contrary to their law to bury, they ſhould be obliged either to burn them, or caſt them into the Volga. I next took notice of the dead-houſe being not a verſt diſtant from the city, the putrid exhalations of which, when the wind blew, might be obſerved to be very offenſive, on the leeſide, at the diſtance of three verſts. This being an unanſwerable proof that the inhabitants of the city were daily obliged to reſpire air much ſaturated with one of the well known cauſes of the plague, I begged that, whatever the archbiſhop and his prieſts might alledge to the contrary, the preſent dead-houſe ſhould be filled up, and a new one erected at a reaſonable diſtance from the city. Laſtly, I demonſtrated the danger of permitting the merchants to form many great ſtacks of fat fiſh about the city, and begged that a ſtop might be put to this practice; and that the ſtreets and houſes in and about the city be kept

ſweet

ſweet and clean. I next ſubmitted to their conſideration, Whether it would not conſiderably tend to the preſervation of this kingdom, if they gave directions to their reſidents and conſuls attending the empires and principalities of the neighbouring nations, to make known to the princes and others concerned, in the moſt expreſs and public manner, that none of their ſubjects ſhould be admitted into the kingdom of Aſtrachan, unleſs they had a teſtimonial of health, ſubſcribed by the Ruſſian reſident or conſul? That, to prevent effectually any people from entering into the kingdom, ſtrong guards ſhould be appointed in different places, to cauſe all ſuch, who came without the proper teſtimonial, remain in quarantine for three months in ſummer, and ſix weeks during the winter.

My petition met with all the ſucceſs I could expect from the governor of Aſtrachan, and alſo from the medicine-chancery. I was the better pleaſed, that all the inhabitants were quite well aſſured it was deſigned for their good. None objected to any thing but the archbiſhop and Kalmucks. The firſt ſaid, that none had a right to appoint him a place where to form the dead-houſe; and the laſt, that it was diſagreeable to their religion to be obliged to throw their dead into the Volga; but both were forced to ſubmit to theſe regulations. The proud biſhop bore me a grudge for

this

this ever after, tho' he could not have ſhewed his diſlike to one who valued it leſs than I did.

The archbiſhop, three or four months after this, childiſhly enough, intended to affront me in the following manner: He had a houſe and church, built upon one of the branches of the Volga, diſtant about one verſt eaſt from Aſtrachan, near to which were ſome ſwamps and lakes, well ſtored with a variety of waterfowl: Thither I went in a boat, to take ſome diverſion with my fowling-piece. At the hearing of a ſhot, the biſhop ſent five or ſix ſervants, with orders to take my piece from me: As they approached, I drew near to my boat, which lay covered under the bank of the river, out of ſight. When I was within call of the crew, I demanded what the prieſtly people wanted? With much impudence, they ſaid, that the archbiſhop had ſent them to take my gun from me, becauſe the ground belonged to the church, and he allowed no creature to be killed there. I ſaid, that I was certain the ground was the Empreſs's, whom I had the honour to ſerve, and that I had a very good right to divert myſelf innocently there, as well as in other places, and deſired them, if they valued their ſafeties, to keep at a due diſtance, otherways I was determined firſt to let them experience what the gun was charged with, and next to treat them as robbers. Our diſcourſe was overheard by five ſailors who were in the boat; they inſtantly made

made their appearance, armed with fi
ropes in their hands, which the failors in
ſia frequently carry in their pockets
therewith, without the ſmalleſt ceremon
erciſed their dexterity upon the backs of
fools ſo well, that they ſoon took to
heels, and happy was he who firſt reache
biſhop's houſe; for the failors would not
off, though the biſhop called to them from
window. After which time I never was m
troubled by him.

CHAP. LXXI.

Concerning the Death of the Empreſs Anna Ivanovna, &c.

ON the 17th of October, old ſtile, the Empreſs Anna Ivanovna died at St Peterſburgh. She was the only daughter of the Czar Ivan or John (elder brother of Peter the Great) who ſurvived Peter the ſecond. She was married to Frederick-William, Duke of Courland, in the year 1710, on the 13th of February O. S. but the Duke died in January 1711, and left no children. His Lady, the Dutcheſs, reigned in Courland till the year 1730, when, after the death of Peter the ſecond, ſhe was declared Empreſs on the 29th of January the ſame year. As this affair, ſo far as I know, never has been made public,

public, and, as I was informed of the following things by many persons who had a share in them, especially as I hope it will be agreeable to the reader, I shall give him an account of what passed at this time, as briefly as I can.

At the death of Peter the second, the lords, who were at the head of affairs, detached to Courland many noblemen of the first families and rank in Russia, among whom was Prince Michael Golitzin, the same with whom I went to Astrachan. They conducted her from Courland to a village within seven versts of Moscow, with all the ceremonious pomp to which her high birth intitled her. Here however she was desired to halt, till she had signed an instrument, which was made out by the great lords in the regency, by which she was declared Empress of all the Russias, *&c.* according to usual form; but it was required, that she, on her part, should oblige herself, and her heirs, to take into her and their councils, eight or nine noblemen, chosen from the families of Russia who were at the head of affairs at this time, of which number the Dolgaratti were the principal. The Empress did not relish this unexpected attack upon her power, which she thought was her birth-right; but, by the advice of her friends, the chief of whom was a Courland gentleman, Mr Byron, now Duke of Courland, she signed the deed, hoping for better times, and made ready for

her entry into Moſcow next day, through many ſuperb triumphal arches prepared on this occaſion.

The lords of regency, full of ſecurity, as they thought, next morning ſummoned the guards, and all nobility and gentry, to make their appearance in the metropolitan church, in order to confirm this agreement or deed by their oaths. A gentleman, Vaſilic Nikitetch Tatiſhoff, afterwards governor of Aſtrachan, who was only a lieutenant, ſtanding near the altar, as ſoon as the deed was read, and the gentlemen firſt in rank were deſired to ſign it, and give their oaths, declaring, that they would ſtand by it with their lives and fortunes, unaſſiſted by any, jumped into the chancel, and, with a loud voice, called to the guards to hear what he had to ſay. The great lords ordered to knock him down; but the guards ſurrounded him with their drawn broad ſwords, and declared, that Mr Tatiſhoff ſhould be heard, and threatened to put any to death who ſhould offer the leaſt hurt to him. Silence enſuing, Mr Tatiſhoff began, by telling them what they very well knew, viz. That their government of Ruſſia was abſolute, and ſuited beſt with their empire: That the guards, who were gentlemen, other gentlemen through the whole empire, and many of the nobility, were altogether excluded from this ſettlement: That only nine families were mentioned, nine out of which

which were to be chosen as hereditary counsellors, without whose advice and approbation, the Empress and all her successors could do nothing of the smallest importance. From this he drew a certain consequence, that none would have the least chance for preferment in the empire, but the cadets of their families, or the most obsequious to their interests; and consequently he, Tatishoff, and all other gentlemen, might, with certainty, bid farewell to the hopes of advancement, let their faithful services deserve ever so much. He said, that in place of one monarch, he was sorry to observe a design of having ten. He put the guards in remembrance of Peter the Great, who, without respect to families, provinces, or different nations, indiscriminately advanced every one as he deserved: Wherefore he begged of the guards to go with him, and bring the Empress to her palace with honour, assuring them, that if she voluntarily should part with any share of her power, in that case he would make no objection. Upon this, the guards, with Tatishoff, and a very great number of nobility, went and brought the Empress to the palace, where Mr Tatishoff was, from a lieutenant, declared privy-counsellor, which is equal in rank to lieutenant-general. The great lords were banished at present, but afterwards many of them were punished with cruel deaths.

This

This Empreſs ruled with juſtice, but great ſeverity. If ſhe at any time ſhewed favour, it was chiefly to foreigners. She kept all her lifetime her Chriſtian neighbours in awe and peace; and carried on a moſt ſucceſsful war, full of glory, againſt the Turks. In the year 1739, ſhe got her niece, the Duke of Mecklenburgh's daughter, Princeſs Anne, married to Prince Erneſt Ulrich of Wolfenbuttel, and declared their iſſue heirs to the throne of Ruſſia. At the Empreſs Anne's death, ſhe declared Prince Ivan, or John, the only ſon of the aforeſaid Prince and Princeſs, heir to the empire; his mother his governeſs till of age, and Byron, now Duke of Courland, regent, till the Emperor ſhould attain his ſeventeenth year of age. The news of the Empreſs's death, and a copy of her will, were ſent by a young Courland gentleman to Aſtrachan, and were received with awful ſilence. Next day we were all obliged to go to the great church there, to be ſworn before the archbiſhop, and ſign our oaths, declaring that we were determined to ſpend our lives and fortunes in defence of the late Empreſs's will, to maintain the Emperor Ivan on the throne, and the Duke of Courland regent of the empire, till the Emperor ſhould attain his ſeventeenth year of age.

At this time, our Governor relieved a poor priſoner, who had been an enſign in the army when Peter the Great returned from his conqueſts

conquests in Persia. Peter gave out orders by the parole, and caused publish them by beat of drum, that, in the night time, if any person walking the streets should deny to answer the centinel's third summons, he had orders to fire upon him. When the orders were read to the ensign, young Puskoff, for that was his name, said, foolishly enough, that if the Emperor himself denied to answer the third summons, he would not hesitate to fire upon him. This was soon reported to the Emperor, who ordered him to be immured. He was accordingly put into a hole in the city wall, and the door built up with stone and lime; neither was there any other opening into that hole, except a slit in the wall, through which he received his meat. In this hole he had remained sixteen years, and in that time had lost his understanding; but, as he was a great enthusiast, the populace believed him also to have been inspired; for when he had been some time confined, he, not knowing a better way to get any thing to support nature, except what was allowed by the government, which was only very coarse rye-flour and a little salt, pretended to predict and tell fortunes, by which means, joined to his great profession of sanctity, he lived very well. Many thousands of people ran to see him taken out, and I went upon an opposite wall with some of Prince Golitzin's children, where I could have a good view, without any hazard.

zard. The ſoldiers firſt called to him to return thanks to heaven, aſſuring him, that Empreſs Anne was dead, and that the merciful Governor, Prince Golitzin, had given orders to reſtore him to liberty upon this occaſion: Then they began to break down the door, and when it was open, he was informed of it, and ordered to come out, but he returned no anſwer; whereupon a ſtrong ſoldier entered into the hole, and brought him to the open air; in doing which, Puſhkin had very near killed him with the ram-rod of a gun which he was in poſſeſſion of. He ſtared round, and aſked many queſtions at the byſtanders, and in particular, Whether they were not leading him to ſome cruel death? But being at laſt convinced that the Prince had reſtored him to his liberty, and had ordered them to carry him to the bagnio to be waſhed clean, and dreſſed in new cloaths, which were ready for him, he, in the moſt fervent and ſincere manner, rendered thanks to heaven, and prayed for the proſperity of the merciful Governor's family. He had no ſooner ſeen the metropolitan church, than he threw himſelf on the ground, with his head towards the church, and continued a long time rendering thanks to God for his deliverance; then he roſe, croſſed himſelf many times, and went to the bagnio, of which he had much need, for he had not the colour of a man, and it was not eaſy to come near him, he ſmelt

ſo

ſo diſagreeably. After he had been waſhed, and dreſſed in clean new cloaths, he had great plenty of meat given him, of which he had no great need, for Prince Golitzin ordered him, and many other priſoners, meat from his own table daily. He at laſt had liberty given him to go where he pleaſed, and a room and bed provided for him in ſome of the ſervants apartments, with orders to take care of him. Every perſon expreſſed great ſatisfaction at the releaſe of this man, and welcomed him by giving him ſtrong liquor and ſpirits to drink, which ſoon put an end to his ſufferings. Four days after he was taken out, I went into the hole, but though the door continued open, I could not draw my breath in it but with difficulty. It conſiſted of two apartments nearly ſquare, the ſmalleſt being eight feet by ſix.

This ſettlement did not continue long, for, in the month of November, we received another ucawſe or royal order, acquainting the inhabitants, that the Duke of Courland was arreſted, and ſent into ſome place of ſafety, becauſe he had intended to uſurp the government by the moſt villainous means, *&c.* Laſtly, that the Ducheſs of Brunſwick, at the moſt humble deſire of the miniſtry, ſenate, and all the orders of the firſt perſonages, and others of note in Peterſburgh, had taken the reins of government into her hands, until the Emperor her ſon ſhould be of age; and

and that, as ſhe was declared regent of the empire by the miniſtry and army, it was commanded that ſhe ſhould be declared regent thro' the kingdom of Aſtrachan, and that all ranks of people in the armies and fleet ſhould give and ſubſcribe their oaths to be obedient and faithful to her government, and ſhould, to the riſk of their lives and fortunes, by all means in their power, defend and maintain her in this high ſtation, and zealouſly maintain the rights of her royal ſon and family. The Princeſs had, by the advice and conſent of the miniſtry, appointed the Prince her huſband to be generaliſſimo of all the armies in Ruſſia, and, at the ſame time, had declared Count Muinich to be the firſt ſubject in Ruſſia next the royal family, but that he was no longer to have any command in the army; and therefore required that the army in Aſtrachan ſhould take notice of this, as no orders from him ought to be obeyed.

CHAP. LXXII.

An Account of the Fall of the Duke of Courland, Regent of Ruſſia, as the Author was informed by creditable People, when he went to St Petersburgh.

NO great changes happen in the world, but they are related very differently. The

The following account of the fall of the Duke of Courland I had from people of very good reputation, and who were in St Peterſburgh at the time. The Ruſſians were not ſatisfied that the Duke of Courland, a foreigner, and but lately a private gentleman, ſhould be regent of Ruſſia, and the royal family have no ſhare of the government. Many, it was ſaid, had ſpoken of this rather too freely, which was reported to the Duke, who, without loſs of time, cauſed ſeize them, and ſent them to the caſtle for examination. Repreſentations in their favours from the Prince and Princeſs of Brunſwick were not only diſregarded, but ill taken. Jealouſies, fears, and animoſities ran now very high, ſo that, I was aſſured, none of the royal family durſt take an airing, for fear of the regent. Five hundred men mounted guard for the protection and honour of each of the two courts every day, and the royal family did every thing which was in their power to ſecure their favour; whereas the Duke of Courland carried on affairs rather with a high hand, as he thought he was certain of keeping this power, and that the only way to do ſo would be to rule with a rod of iron. It was ſaid, and believed by many, that he intended to cut off the royal family, and, by one way or other, to get the Princeſs Eliſabeth to marry his eldeſt ſon. Be this as it will, the Prince and Princeſs of Brunſwick being in this dangerous condition, and get-

ting notice that the regent had caufed torture many of their friends in the caftle, and had paffed fentence of death upon fome, who were ordered for execution in a few days, fent for the Field Marfhal Count Muinich. They made him acquainted with every thing, with all the caufes of their fears, and demanded his advice and affiftance. He advifed them that they fhould difclofe their apprehenfions to none, and promifed that he would foon free them of their fears or lofe his life in the attempt: Which, if he did, fhould never be a caufe of making their fituation in the fmalleft degree worfe; therefore he defired that they would leave the execution of this affair to him. He had gone very privately from his own houfe to the palace, and took the fame precaution in returning home.

Before this time, a mifunderftanding had happened betwixt the Duke of Courland and the field marfhal; but, as the duke was now declared regent of the Empire, the field marfhal thought it could not derogate from his honour to make the firft advances to a reconciliation. He therefore, without lofs of time, or the fmalleft hefitation, fent a letter to the regent profeffing great defire of being efteemed one of his friends, and that he would be glad to know when it would be convenient for his Highnefs to receive a vifit.

Nothing

Nothing could possibly have happened so agreeable to the regent. He had not the least doubt of the count's sincerity, and wished above all things to make a man of his great abilities his friend: He therefore returned for answer, that he would be extremely glad to receive a visit from the count at all times, the sooner the better; and begged that he would favour him with his company that very day at dinner; because he had some affairs of the greatest consequence to lay before him.

At dinner, (for such an answer the count expected, and consequently obeyed the summons immediately) the count appeared extremely glad, and expressed much satisfaction at the happy reconciliation. The regent, no doubt thought himself a happy man, in having as he imagined, a person of the count's abilities, his declared and open friend. The highest marks of respect and friendship were professed, with the greatest shew of sincerity, on both sides, and they spent the afternoon together, taking a chearful glass, till late in the afternoon, when they parted with mutual satisfaction: The one that he had, as he thought, gained one of the greatest men in the Empire to be his trusty friend; the other, that he had lulled the regent into a notion of the greatest security. The regent begged that the count would make his visits very frequent, which the other assured him

should

ſhould be complied with, as long as they ſhould be acceptable. The regent declared nothing could ever be more agreeable to him, but little did he dream of what very ſoon followed.

Soon after midnight, when moſt people are generally aſleep, except ſuch as are in pain or miſery, card-players, drunkards, and villains of all kinds, the count in company of two or three truſty brave men went to the regent's palace. As he was lieutenant-colonel of the regiment of guards upon duty, and very well known to all the ſoldiers, he paſſed on to the guard-houſe, where he demanded to ſpeak with the major, who was principal commander on duty, and who, it was thought, was well acquainted with the count's deſign, and fully reſolved heartily to ſecond him. They with a few more of the guards, whom the major could well truſt, with great caution approached the bed-chamber, and ſoon forced open the door. It was ſaid that the duke with his ſword for a long time defended himſelf bravely, and the dutcheſs with a ſabre wounding ſeverals, till ſome rude ſoldiers knocked her on the head, and even after that with difficulty ſecured her at laſt! Scarcely it ever happens otherways than that ſomething very prodigious is related at the deaths or diſgraces of great men, who have in ſome ſhape been eminent in the world; and ſuch ſtories are greedily

greedily ſwallowed down, and by the multitude, gain credit ſooner than more probable hiſtory. That the Duke of Courland, who it was well enough known did not want good judgment, ſhould upon ſuch an occaſion expoſe himſelf, lady, and family to immediate certain death, when he ſaw himſelf ſurrounded by ſo many brave men, may gain credit with ſome children, but ſcarcely with any other; that the dutcheſs might have fallen into ſome outrageous fit I ſhall not diſpute, but her ſo readily getting a ſabre, where none were kept, and there performing military feats, carrying down all before her, till, only by accident, ſhe was knocked on the head by a rude ſoldier: Whilſt her brother-in-law, Guſtavus Biron, bred a ſoldier, and naturally afraid of nothing, was caught making his eſcape through the garden, is too romantic for me to believe. In ſhort, that they were all made priſoners and ſent to Sluſſelburgh, thence to Siberia, is very certain.

This event was indeed as ſudden as unforeſeen by the Duke of Courland: But it was moſt fortunate for the Royal family, and for many (ſome making their numbers exceed a hundred, others confining them to forty) gentlemen, related to the principal families in Ruſſia, at that time confined in the caſtle, for it was aſſerted, and probably very truly, that many were to have been brought to the torture, and ſome to have ſuffered death the

day

day following: So that it was no wonder to hear that the Ruſſians rejoiced much at the downfal of the Duke of Courland. He was ſaid to be a man of very good parts, but rather cruel; it was thought it was purely by his counſel that the late Empreſs ſhewed ſo great diſdain and cruelty to the moſt ancient and noble families in Ruſſia: And I cannot help thinking there are many reaſons in the courſe of the late reign to juſtify the Ruſſians, and others for believing this. Whoever were well with the Duke, were alſo careſſed by the Empreſs: but it was much more dangerous for any perſon to affront one of the Duke's ſervants than any of the Empreſs's. The Duke certainly ruled the cabinet, and by what happened in the courſe of this reign, it may be truly ſaid that affairs for the good and glory of the Empire were carried on at a high rate, but then his ambition and cruelty rendered him odious to the Ruſſians: and, though no wiſe man would ſpeak his opinion, every one, even foreigners undoubtedly condemned ſuch bad conduct, which made his fall regreted by none, but his immediate dependents. Was it not the higheſt ambition which made him not only adviſe the late Empreſs to appoint him regent; but, contrary to all views of good policy, to maintain himſelf, which he ſaw he could not effect but by ſwimming thro' ſeas of blood, in the regency? Was it good

policy

policy to ſet himſelf upon a level, and even threaten the Royal Family, and at the ſame time, by all the ways and means which tyranny can effect, alienate the good diſpoſitions, and opinions of the moſt ignorant of all the Ruſſians, by the unparalleled cruel tortures daily inflicted upon, poſſibly the moſt illuſtrious and honourable, as well as innocent and induſtrious people in the Empire? It ſignifies very little what any deſpotic court gives out againſt a priſoner, where perſons are examined, tried, condemned, and ſuffer, not in the eyes of the world, but, moſt ſecretly, by their enemies, who lay what ever crimes they may think fit to their charge; or if they ſuffer publicly, it is very well known that they are rendered incapable of ſpeaking by gags driven into their mouths. The Duke of Courland was conſcious to himſelf that he was not beloved by the Ruſſians, and therefore probably wiſhed for the regency, that he might have it in his power abſolutely to cruſh all his enemies. But it ſeems he did not think that torturing and putting to cruel death ſo many men of different families, who only wiſhed well to, and ſpoke well of the Royal Family, would raiſe him a greater number of enemies, and that they, added to the weight of the Royal Family, might one day prove too ſtrong for a ſtranger and an alien! But if he had generouſly, and of himſelf given up his regency to the Grand Ducheſs, whoſe natural

natural right it was, then he might have lived in great ſplendor and tranquillity in his dukedom of Courland, protected by the whole power of Ruſſia: And probably his illuſtrious family would have been in ſafety at this day.

CHAP. LXXII.

A Continuation of what happened in the Year 1740, at St Petersburgh and Aſtrachan.

I SHALL cloſe this year with an account of what happened at St Peterſburgh and Aſtrachan, in relation to the Turkiſh and Perſian ambaſſadors. The Turks diſpatched from Conſtantinople a grand embaſſy, but being very late in the year, it was obliged to halt on the Turkiſh borders till the year 1741 of which I ſhall ſay no more till I take notice of the affairs which then happened.

I obſerved that two ambaſſadors had been ſent by Kuli Khan this year with the elephants, one of whom died in Kizlaar. Kuli Khan however was determined to have two, therefore he diſpatched another, ſaid to be his couſin-german; who arrived in Aſtrachan with a train of five hundred men, the latter end of November. He gave out that he was to ſtay but a very few days and then proceed with all expedition for St Peterſburgh, and

and therefore required that the governor would hold a ſtrong eſcort of horſemen ready to protect him and his retinue from the Kalmucks, and that the governor would grant proper paſſports for his couriers to be ſent to the former ambaſſador, who was obliged, by the ſeverity of the winter, to ſtop at Tamboff, a large city on the eaſt ſide of the province of Veronits: The governor anſwered all theſe requeſts without the ſmalleſt loſs of time, and being very willing to get rid of ſuch a troubleſome gueſt at Aſtrachan, he let him know that it would be almoſt impoſſible for him and his retinue to lodge in that city during the winter, becauſe magazines of proviſions were laid up only for the uſe of the army and garriſon, and as the Kalmucks were now on the borders of Circaſſia, they could not ſupply him ſufficiently with live cattle. The governor would not permit him to lodge in the city, being afraid, as they were very careleſs, that they might ſet the city in flames, and poſſibly they might do this deſignedly; as the governor was well aſſured by the Reſident Arapoff in Perſia, that the Shach was marching his great army round the ſouth end of the Caſpian Sea, through the provinces of Aſtrabat, Meſanderan, Bactria, Caſbin and Ardebil, and that the vanguard was on the borders of the great Mogan deſart, or Media, and that though the Shach gave out that he deſigned to pu-

 niſh

nish his rebellious subjects the Lesgee Tartars, who inhabit the mountains of Caucasus, (who by the bye never acknowledge subjection to the Empire of Persia) yet it was greatly to be suspected that his principal design was upon Circassia, and the kingdom of Astrachan. This, I say, forced the governor to use all his skill to send him into Russia, where he could neither be such an effectual spy, nor influence the Tartar inhabitants of Astrachan, who were all Mahometans. The governor therefore gave him a lodging in a large suburb opposite to the admiralty, which was strongly fortified with a number of cannon ready to be discharged amongst them in case of any danger. Not contented with this, he ordered three hundred grenadiers to keep watch about him and his retinue night and day, under the command of Lieutenant-colonel Eglebright, an able, resolute officer, a Swede, who was made prisoner at the battle of Poltava. The ambassador stormed at this treatment, threatning to make his complaint to the Shach. The governor did not regard this much, but returned polite answers, telling him that the colonel had been formerly well acquainted with the Persians, and their customs; and that it was to do him honour that he had appointed a man of his rank to attend his Excellency, and provide every thing necessary for him; that the soldiers were chiefly design-

ed

ed to do him honour, and to take care that no fire, theft, or any other unforeseen mischief might happen, for which he the governor might be blamed by his own court.

These answers amused him, and were not disagreeable to his pride. He had not been in Astrachan eight days till he was taken ill of an ague; he sent to the governor, desiring that one of the best physicians or surgeons in the city might be appointed to attend him. The governor acquainted me with this, and desired I would attend him; but at my earnest desire, Mr Malloch, who had been formerly employed by the Persians, and knew much more about their ways than I could do, was appointed. Mr Malloch was a very sensible man, but had a considerable share of vanity, and was sollicitous to become rich: He was so far from taking this in ill part that he returned me thanks for doing him this honour. He went, and considering that violent medicines, such as emeticks might occasion such a vain ignorant man as the ambassador was, to reject all medicines, and possibly complain of him, ordered some infusion of the bark. When this was sent to the ambassador, he signified to Colonel Eglebright that he would take none of it till Mr Malloch was sent for and present. At Mr Malloch's arrival, he went to the ambassador with the colonel; who required Malloch to take the first dose: This surprised him,

him, who made anſwer that he was in good health, nor had need of any medicine, that he never took any medicines except when he was ſick, and that if his Excellency did not chuſe to take the medicines, there was no need of his attendance, and was going away, when he ordered to ſtop him, and at ſame time, ordered two of his men who had long poles in their hands to ſtrike him, which they were preparing to do, when the colonel full of rage, his eyes flaſhing fire, laid his hand on his ſword, and ſwore that whoever ſtruck Mr Malloch, ſhould inſtantly loſe his head. He did not ſcruple even to upbraid the ambaſſador, and ſaid that he wondered much that ſuch a great Prince as the Shach was, ſent as his ambaſſador a man ſo unpolite, and ſo very unmannerly as to to offer to ſtrike any officer belonging to the Empire of Ruſſia, telling him at the ſame time that the greateſt lords in Ruſſia durſt not preſume to uſe men of his rank in that ſcandalous way. Eglebright was probably as brave a man as ever eyes beheld, and was like another Hercules: His very looks diſconcerted the ambaſſador ſo much that he begged the colonel would take no further notice of it, and ſaid that he hoped Mr Malloch and he would be good friends, adding that it was a cuſtom in Perſia, that the phyſician ſhould take the firſt doſe of any medicine he might preſcribe for people of

great

great rank; to which the colonel anſwered, that no regular bred man in Europe would ever ſubmit to ſuch indignity; and from this he was at no loſs to know that Perſia was not ſupplied with any perſons regularly educated. Thus this affair ended, much to the ſatisfaction of the Governor, who never ſpoke of it to the ambaſſador, and Mr Malloch very ſoon cured him, but got only about the value of three pounds ſterling for his trouble.

New year's day came on before we could get free of this beaſt. There is a cuſtom in Ruſſia, that the drummers and muſicians belonging to the army and fleet go about in a body, to pay their reſpects to the great men on new year's day. The Governor ordered them to go to the ambaſſador's houſe, and Colonel Eglebright to be there. I believe there were three hundred in all, or a few more. When the drums began, it was eaſily obſerved, that the ambaſſador's countenance changed, and he ſeemed to be in very great confuſion, for he knew nothing of it before they began, and, ſeemingly afraid, aſked the colonel the meaning of it? who, ſmiling, told him it was their new-year's-day, and they meant only to do his Excellency honour; at which he turned calm, and, when the muſick began to play, roſe from his ſopha, and expreſſed great ſatisfaction; but, though he kept the men long, he gave them only a trifle, which the colonel cauſed them to return; then

then he talked of the number of the army about Aſtrachan, and their late ſucceſs againſt the Turks? to which the colonel made pertinent anſwers, but magnified every thing greatly. On the twelfth day, the chriſtening of the waters was performed after the manner in Ruſſia, at which many Perſians mounted on horſeback attended upon a high ground immediately under a great baſtion of the caſtle, upon which were mounted many very great guns. When the circular fire from the ſmall arms began, the Perſian horſe were put in ſome confuſion; but when the great cannon were fired, they were diſtracted, and yet, which is ſurpriſing, although there were at leaſt forty Perſians mounted, not one of them fell from their horſes. From this we could learn, that theſe horſes were not accuſtomed to great guns, but that the Perſians were excellent horſemen. This ambaſſador and his retinue were watched ſo cloſely, that they could make but few diſcoveries here. The Tartars, and others of the Mahometan religion, were given to know, that it would be taken very ill if they went to him, unleſs ſome Ruſſian ſworn interpreter was preſent, and that it would be eſteemed a great crime to invite any of them to their houſes. At laſt, he reſolved to march from Aſtrachan, and appointed a day for every thing to be got ready; but when the day came he would have again ſhifted: However the colonel let

him

him know, that, as he had done ſo frequently before, if he did not go, the Governor was determined to ſend off a courier to the Ruſſian reſident, who would get orders to repreſent the ambaſſador's unreaſonable behaviour ſince his arrival in Ruſſia; and finally, that neither carriages nor paſſage would be granted till the courier returned with an anſwer from the Shach. Upon this repreſentation, he preſently reſolved to march; and orders were given to the lieutenant-colonel to paſs all the towns and cities in Aſtrachan, without the ambaſſador's being able to view them, and thus to hurry him through the kingdom of Aſtrachan. Indeed all ſorts of men were glad at the departure of this troubleſome man, eſpecially as our markets were beginning to be very coſtly to the poorer houſe-keepers.

At this time we had no fewer than four Perſian ambaſſadors at once in Ruſſia, viz. one on his return in Ruſſia, the other on his way to St Peterſburgh with the elephants, and the troubleſome man I have ſaid ſo much about. There was a fourth called Iſmael Bey, who had lived in Aſtrachan eighteen or twenty years: He made peace with Shach Tahmas and Peter the Great, granting to Peter, Giland, and all the provinces upon the weſt ſide of the Caſpian ſea betwixt it and the borders of Ruſſia; but was afraid ever to return into Perſia, and therefore lived at the Ruſſian expence, and kept a court like a great prince in

Aſtrachan.

Astrachan. When any ambassador from Persia, in his way to Russia, halted at Astrachan, a captain's command consisting of a hundred and twenty men kept guard upon Ismael Bey, for two reasons: The first was, to let the Persians see what honour was paid him; and the other was, to prevent the Persians from assassinating this old man. At such times, no Persian was admitted into Ismael Bey's presence, unless he gave orders to the captain. Some have been unlucky in attempting to pass the guard, without previously demanding leave from Ismael Bey; for no soldiers are more pointed in their duty than the Russians; and if the least force is used, the soldier, without any hesitation, will knock him down with the butt of his musquet, or run him through with his bayonet.

CHAP. LXXIV.

What happened in the Year 1741.

DURING the hard frost, we were ignorant of every thing passing in Persia; but, as the frost seldom continues much longer than two months, that time soon elapsed, and then we were informed, that Kuli Khan had passed the great Mogan desart, through the middle of which the rivers Arras and Cur run, and join their streams about sixty versts west

weſt from the ſea: That he had made many unſucceſsful attempts againſt theſe brave highlanders, and had loſt many thouſands of his beſt troops, an account of which I ſhall give when I treat of my travels through that country.

In the month of April, the heat began to grow very uneaſy, and uſhered in with it petechial fevers, which raged through the whole city with great fury. The Governor's children and ſervants were firſt ſeized, and after that his lady. By the mercy of God they all recovered, though the Princeſs was in the greateſt danger, chiefly owing to her being delirious, and not eaſily managed by her ſervants, nor indeed by me, as I could not take the liberty to uſe all freedom with a lady of her diſtinguiſhed family and rank in the world. At the beginning of this diſeaſe, I adviſed the good old Prince not to enter the rooms where the ſick children lay, nor eat much animal food, nor ſleep with any perſon with him, but to drink with acids, and every morning and evening to take a little exerciſe by walking upon the walls of the caſtle; but above all, to take care that the non-naturals be kept perfectly regular. He followed my advice, and eſcaped. His lady had a dangerous relapſe, from which ſhe was recovered by a very great *diaphoreſis*. Three days before this happened, ſhe was quite delirious, when I expreſſed my very great concern for her ſafe-

ty, at which the Prince was very melancholy; but there was a neceſſity for my diſcovering that I apprehended danger, becauſe it was ſo ordered by an imperial decree, that all the ceremonies, according to the Greek church, might be duly performed: But had not that been the caſe, I was ſo much caſt down from the fear of her danger, that any, who knew me, might have eaſily known the cauſe; for my own mother never could have been more careful of me than ſhe was. She had not been long ſweating, when ſhe was overtaken with a calm pleaſant ſleep. I then attended cloſely, and, after ſhe had ſlept fourteen hours, ſhe lifted up her eyes, and ſpoke to me quite ſenſibly. I then left her with her waiting-woman, and, with joy, told the Prince of my good hopes, who could not be kept from ſeeing her; but he ſtaid no time, as I aſſured him, that, unleſs ſhe had more ſleep, ſhe would probably ſuffer a ſecond relapſe. This being the laſt time that any of that illuſtrious family were ſick during my ſtay in Aſtrachan, I ſhall trouble the reader no further about their diſeaſes, but proceed.

The Princeſs of the Kalmucks arrived upon the banks of the Volga ſooner than was expected, and paſſed the river with her children and the bulk of the warlike Kalmucks, before the Ruſſians and Coſſacks could arrive on the banks of the Volga, where ſhe remained during the ſummer. It was believed, that this

this Princeſs was adviſed to take this ſtep, to prevent being forced to yield up the principality to the above-mentioned Donduck Daſhee, who, ſhe was informed, was on his journey for that purpoſe, and had ſet out from Cazan, where I ſhall juſt now leave him Had this Princeſs remained on the weſt ſide of the Volga, ſhe was afraid that the weſtern banks of the Volga, the Don Coſſacks upon the river Don, and the Circaſſians and Grebenſke Coſſacks on the ſouth, might altogether either have forced her to quit all titles to her principality, or might have gained over many of the Kalmuck chiefs either through deceitful promiſes or fear; or laſtly, that all theſe powers combined at once againſt her, might have cramped her principality very much, and at laſt, probably, force her to ſeek protection from the Turks, which ſhe had already experienced in her huſband's lifetime to be very uncomfortable; and therefore it was ſaid, that ſhe had ſtolen a march upon the Ruſſian troops, and very early paſſed the Volga; that, in caſe the empire ſhould uſe violent means, ſhe might at leaſt have the chance of a vaſt extended deſart, where ſhe, with her faithful Kalmucks, might take refuge, and have a probability of joining with the great nation, called Black Kalmucks, whoſe religion, manners, and cuſtoms, are the ſame with her's and the Chineſe. Whatever her reaſons were, I cannot poſitively aſ-

ſert,

ſert, but that ſhe paſſed the Volga, with thirty or forty thouſand men, is certain.

The next affair that happened worth taking notice of, is the arrival of the Perſian ambaſſador from St Peterſburgh, who was obliged to winter in Ruſſia in his way to Perſia.

The governor having experienced the danger of letting theſe Perſians lodge near the city, obliged this ambaſſador to ſtay in an old palace, which Peter the Great had built for himſelf, diſtant about one mile from Aſtrachan, on a branch of the river Volga. He alſo commanded three hundred ſoldiers to encamp about the palace, under pretence of doing honour to, and protecting the embaſſy; but truly to ſpy their actions and take particular notice of the inhabitants of Aſtrachan who might pay him viſits, which was forbidden: For by this time the Shach had marched to the north of Derbent, and we had very great reaſon to fear, that, whatever excuſes he made, or pretences to puniſh his rebellious Leſgees, his real deſign was to fall upon Aſtrachan. But the Governor had more certain reaſons to be afraid of this, than the inhabitants of Aſtrachan were acquainted with, of which he gave me the following account, when I went with him into Perſia.

As the Governor had been warned by many truſty men from Buchara and Chiva, he was as much on his guard as was poſſible. He alſo not only, under divers pretences, ſent

sent spies into Persia, but also into Buchara and Chiva. He, from all these instruments, learned certainly, that the Shach had scarcely reached Mezenderan, when he was informed, that the inhabitants of Chiva had unexpectedly fallen upon the Persian troops he had left to keep them under his government, and had cut them all to pieces, except a very few stragglers, who had brought these news; whereupon the Chivines lost no time in dispatching ambassadors to St Petersburgh to declare this happy event for them, to warn the Russians to put no trust in the perfidious Persian promises; and lastly, to seek the protection of the empire against Kuli Khan. As these ambassadors were obliged to pass thro' Astrachan, they discovered all to the Governor, who caressed them much, and sent them carefully and expeditiously forward to St Petersburgh. At the same time, the friendship he cultivated with the Chivines, was only personal, never engaging for the honour of the empire. Add to this, that many of the Georgians and Lesgee Tartars were often coming to Astrachan, giving an account of what the Shach had done, and the places of his encampment; all agreeing that he certainly designed, if nothing stopped him, to fall upon the borders of Russia, notwithstanding the great professions of amity and respect he pretended to have for the Russian empire.

About

About this time Perſian coin, both gold and ſilver, was brought to the Tartar markets, and alſo into the city in great plenty. The governor having been informed of this, cauſed ſeize the Kalmucks, who brought it in; and upon examinatiou they declared, that they had that money from Perſian and Tartar ſpies, a number of whom were ſent amongſt them, and ſome were alſo in Aſtrachan.

With ſuch privacy and precaution were theſe ſpies picked up, and ſent to Oranburgh, and other places of ſecurity, that I, who lived in the governor's houſe, and daily eat at his table, never learned any thing of it, till five years after this the Prince informed me, when we were marching into Perſia; and the method he took to keep every thing ſecret was thus.

He cauſed bring the priſoners, found in and about the city, into the citadel, and lodge them in a ſtrong ſecure place, into which he went, attended only by his counſellors and ſecretaries, who were ſworn not to divulge what paſſed there, or ſpeak about theſe priſoners to any perſon. After due examination, and when there was a number of them together, they were chained and ſent with their proper guard, out of the city in the night time to Oranburgh. He ordered alſo a number of ſoldiers, armed with piſtols and broad ſwords hid under their garments,

and

and cloathed like Ruſſian peaſants, to go, as if to traffic, amongſt the Kalmueks, and pick up all ſuſpicious perſons, but ſtrictly ordered them to obſerve the utmoſt ſecrecy. In this manner did this wiſe governor pick up the greateſt number of thoſe ſpies, that the Shach was quite at a loſs how to proceed.

He had threatened the Turks, it is true, and at this time it was rumoured that he had actually laid ſiege to Kars, and other cities belonging to the Turks: But we were very well aſſured of the contrary: For he was encamped with his army about thirty miles north from Derbent, fighting with Uſinci a Leſgee prince, and had built a large caſtle under the hills, which I have ſeen, to protect his army from the inroads of theſe brave highlanders; a diſtinct account of which I ſhall give when treating of theſe countries.

In ſhort, the couriers diſpatched by land, by the way of Kizlaar, from the Perſian ambaſſadors to their Shach, were way-laid, ſeized and ſent to Siberia, as were alſo the couriers diſpatched from him to them, whoſe writings fell into the hands of the Governor, which effectually diſcovered that he intended to fall upon the kingdom of Aſtrachan.

At laſt it was found out, that the Perſian couriers were loſt, whereon a complaint was made to the court of St Peterſburgh, and alſo to the government of Aſtrachan. The Governor iſſued out his ſham orders

ders to ſcour the deſarts, to take better care in time coming, and to examine all ſuſpected perſons, and many innocent people at this time were ſeized, but ſuffered no manner of hurt, only a ſhort confinement, but very good treatment otherways, purely with a deſign to amuſe, and ſatisfy the Perſians.

Leſt the unwary ſoldiers employed in theſe ſecret affairs, ſhould acquaint their companions of what they had been doing, expreſs informations were ſent to the governors, to whoſe care they were ſent, to retain them there, and ſend an equal number of their ſoldiers to Aſtrachan. By this means theſe ſecret tranſactions never were known to the inhabitants of Aſtrachan: Nor could I ever have come to the knowledge of them if I had not been informed by the Prince himſelf five years thereafter, as I ſaid above.

I thought it intereſting to know what became of theſe priſoners who were ſent to Oranburgh and other parts, and begged that the Prince would inform me whether they were not put to death: He aſſured me that they were only kept as priſoners at large, that is to ſay, they had liberty to go about and follow any buſineſs they could, but were not permitted to go out of the confines preſcribed to them; and that all of them expreſſed very great ſatisfaction at their fortune, in being reſcued from ſo much trouble and danger as they were daily expoſed to by their tyrant,

and

and that many of them had professed the Christian religion, were married, and enjoyed all the immunities which natural-born Russians enjoy.

But to return to the ambassador, who was getting ready to set out on his return from Astrachan to Persia: About the end of May, he was informed that two ships were ready to transport him and his retinue to Persia; and the Governor desired that he would make all haste to depart, as much time had already been lost, and that the vessels would sail in a few days, whether he went or not; but advertised him, that if he did not accept of that good opportunity of a free passage, he might go in what manner he pleased on his own charges; and that the court of Russia had sent orders to withdraw his daily allowance of provision, if he staid longer than the time prescribed. Accordingly the ambassador in earnest made all haste, and bought up many things which were, by the Russians, judged contraband, and also had imprudently stolen two Russian boys from poor people. The parents having acquainted the Governor of their reasons for suspecting that the Persians had stolen their children, he sent a friendly message to the ambassador, letting him know, that he could permit no contraband merchandise to be shipped off for Persia, and desiring him instantly to return such goods to the merchants, and receive back his money. He also acquainted

him, that two boys were loſt, and the parents had but too good reaſon to ſuſpect that ſome of his train had ſtolen them; therefore deſired that they might be reſtored without further trouble to their parents. This civil remonſtrance was neither kindly taken, nor in any part complied with; wherefore the ambaſſador received a ſecond meſſage, acquainting him, that the Governor intended to pay him a viſit that afternoon, and explain matters to him. The Governor was told, that the ambaſſador raged at his meſſage in a very threatening, ill-bred manner; wherefore he cauſed a few troops to march, and remain near the old palace, and, with a retinue of gentlemen, rowed down the river in his barge. At their firſt meeting, the Perſian was very ill-bred and high, but a chair being placed for the Governor, after his fury was a little abated, he very calmly told him, that he was ſurpriſed that any perſon, who repreſented his ſovereign, could put himſelf in ſuch puerile paſſion about what could not be helped; that he might eaſily think no government would have their laws trampled upon and deſpiſed by any. He ſaid, for I was preſent and heard the whole diſcourſe, that no ambaſſador ever pretended to privileges which were repugnant to the well-being or laws of the empire to which he was ſent; but that, when he had taken his laſt audience of leave to return to his native country from the late Empreſs, his

embaſſy

embaſſy ended; nor could any perſon in their ſenſes imagine, that he then had properly the privileges of ambaſſadors, though it was true that the Ruſſians, ſo long as they behaved well, paid great reſpect to thoſe who had been in that high ſtation; yet his embaſſy being ended, he was no ambaſſador. But he obſerved, with a determined countenance, that all theſe his tranſactions, ſince he came to Aſtrachan, would be honeſtly reported to the Shach; and laſtly, that he was reſolved, that no proviſions, nor other marks of reſpect or beneficence ſhould be granted to him and his retinue, till the children were reſtored, and that he had already given orders to the commanders of the ſhips, to receive no forbidden merchandiſe; and having ſaid this, he took his leave. He had ſcarcely gone to the river ſide, when the boys were reſtored, and this troubleſome Perſian was at laſt obliged to give up all his merchandiſe. The Governor was pointed in having the infamous actions of this man ſo effectually repreſented to the Shach, that we were well aſſured he was ſtrangled ſoon after his arrival in Perſia.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXXV.

Concerning the Author's Journey to St Petersburgh; what happened remarkable on the road, at St Petersburgh, and till his return.

I Had now remained eighteen months in Astrachan, without having received my salary, or any other appointment. Before I left St Petersburgh, I had contracted a great kindness for Miss Hadderling, whose father was superintendant over all the sloop-builders, and captain in the Russian service; her mother was daughter to Mr Edwards, captain of one of the Russian men of war, both English. Some overtures about our marriage having been agreed to, I desired greatly to go to St Petersburgh, and, for excuse, represented effectually my not having been properly appointed to any command, nor having received my salary to subsist upon. My greatest difficulty was to get permission from the Governor; but, after many fruitless attempts, I at last succeeded, by promising to return to him, even if I should take my discharge from the service; to do which, I thought my right could not be opposed, though in this I was mistaken, as I afterwards experienced.

Before I enter upon my journey, I must beg to be indulged in relating what happen-

ed

ed to my wife when ſhe was an infant. Her parents had made a ſmall fortune, and, tired of the Ruſſian ſervice, agreed to return to England, to live in Woolwich among their relations: In order to effect this with the greater ſafety, they agreed that Mrs Hadderling ſhould go with her infant and all their valuable effects to an uncle ſhe had, named Edwards, an eminent ſilk-weaver, who lived in London. She accordingly ſailed from Cronſtadt in a Britiſh ſhip, in the year 1722, with great proſperity and favourable winds, till they were oppoſite Yarmouth, when the ſhip began to fill with water; though the weather was not very ſtormy, nor could the pumps relieve them: In this diſtreſs, they took to the long-boat, into which they hurried Mrs Hadderling, and a humane ſailor took care of the infant; but the ſhip ſunk quickly, which obliged the ſailor to toſs the child into the long-boat, which was preſerved by falling upon ſomething ſoft. By this misfortune Mrs Hadderling loſt all her effects; and, it was ſaid, that the captain had villainouſly ſunk the ſhip. Be this as it will, Mrs Hadderling next day arrived in London, and waited upon her uncle, who kept them that winter; and, as he had no children, would gladly have kept his niece, promiſing to give her, at his death, all the fortune he might be worth: But her father would not ſubmit to this, and her good uncle, ſhe is afraid, is dead, as ſhe has heard

nothing

nothing of him ſince ſhe has been married.

Having, as was ſaid, obtained leave, and received the neceſſary paſſport, I ſet out in a poſt-boat, accompanied, by the goodneſs of our Governor, with a grenadier, who formerly had been frequently ſent courier to St Peterſburgh, and knew the road very well. We proceeded about two hundred miles from Aſtrachan, by rowing and ſailing, without meeting with any thing uncommon: At this diſtance it blew a ſtrong gale from the north, ſo that, having both the current of the river and an exceeding bold wind to fight againſt, and the men being unable to do more, we drew the boat into a ſmall creek in an iſland, reſolving to wait till the wind was abated. The men being very much fatigued, and wet with the ſplaſhing of the water, for we had no rain, went aſhore, and laid themſelves down to ſleep, whilſt I watched, for my thoughts had baniſhed ſleep from me. In this creek we had not been long, till I ſpied a boat coming down the river with reefed ſail. I wakened the men, who ſaid that it was a poſt-boat, and that their orders were, never to paſs one another, when there was a poſſibility of changing; wherefore they made a ſignal, which effectually brought the other boat to. They were convoying a Kalmuck to the Governor of Aſtrachan. This man ſeemed to be in diſtreſs, was very well dreſſed, had only a battle-

ax

ax, but neither bow, arrows, nor ſcymitar. Underſtanding he could ſpeak Ruſſian language, I enquired if there were any news in the country, and from whence he came? Upon this he burſt out in a flood of tears, but, having compoſed himſelf, gave me the following account by one of the boatmen who underſtood him: I am flying for my life to the protection of the Governor of Aſtrachan. This day has been a fatal day to my Prince, and I am afraid, that out of five thouſand brave Kalmucks, I am the only one reſerved to lament the loſs of the much beloved, brave Prince of the Kalmucks, who, upon the moſt explicit aſſurances given him by the Court of Ruſſia, that the Princeſs, wife of the late Donduk Ambo, would diveſt herſelf and her children of any pretenſions they might have to reign over the Kalmucks, in his favour, marched from Cazan, where he had lived ſome years in a princely manner, to the place where the widow Princeſs kept her court, (not twenty miles diſtant from where we then were, on the eaſt ſide of the Volga.) He, after a week's march, arrived within three or four verſts of the Princeſs, accompanied with five thouſand brave men, to her fore-poſt or outguards, dreading no harm; there he was adviſed to ſtop by them, becauſe, they ſaid, they had orders to permit no armed men to advance nearer the camp where ſhe was, and begged that he would not raſhly expoſe his

men

men or them to unneceſſary danger; but at the ſame time told him, that they would receive any meſſage from him to the Princeſs, deliver the ſame, and bring an anſwer, or that they would permit any one of his followers, unarmed, to carry a meſſage to the Princeſs, and receive what anſwer ſhe might be diſpoſed to grant.

This being agreed to, the Prince withdrew his followers to a ſmall diſtance, and ſent one, in whom he could confide to the Princeſs, with inſtructions to inform her Highneſs of the great reſpect he entertained for her and her children; that he hoped he never ſhould have reaſon to change his ſentiments; and let her know, that he was arrived there with a few faithful friends, by the aſſurances the Court of Ruſſia had given him, that her Highneſs would have no objections that he ſhould take on him, which he ſaid was his right, the government of the Kalmucks; that her Higneſs's out-guards would not permit him to advance nearer till her pleaſure was known, and he had withdrawn to a ſmall diſtance, where he intended to wait her friendly anſwer.

The only anſwer ſhe was pleaſed to return, was, that it was now late, but that next morning ſhe would ſoon adjuſt all their affairs. He ſaid the Prince did not reliſh ſuch an anſwer, but was determined to wait the event.

Accordingly next morning, with the riſing of the ſun, the Princeſs appeared, mounted on

on horſeback, with about thirty thouſand armed men at her back, and, without the ſmalleſt ceremony, gave orders for an attack, which, he believed, bloody on both ſides: At this he cried like a child, ſaying, that without doubt his Prince was killed, and that he had no reaſon to believe that any were ſaved but himſelf, who miraculouſly fled, he thought, unperceived in the thick duſt, to the Ruſſian reſident, who was encamped with about three hundred ſoldiers on a riſing ground, at no great diſtance from the field of battle.

The reſident was a captain: Whether it would have been thought prudent in him to interfere or not, I ſhall not take on me to determine. He never, ſo far as I know, was queſtioned for looking on as an impotent ſpectator: But ſure he might have uſed all his arguments to diſſuade the Princeſs from ſpilling ſo much innocent blood, which I never heard he had attempted.

The reſident however got this man conveyed privately to the river ſide, where he had boats for the uſe of his men; from thence he diſpatched him poſt with a pacquet, which he ſhowed me, for the Governor. I requeſted him to eat a little of what I had, but he ſaid he could not; however, I got him perſuaded to take a glaſs of wine and a bit of bread, and thus we parted. I imagined that I was long enough in company, and in the neighbourhood of theſe barbarians: As my

men were not fatigued, after giving each of them a glaſs of ſpirits, I perſuaded them to proceed, which they did with difficulty and danger. We gained their poſthouſe in the evening, and paſſed the Kalmuck's camp in the night-time, and met with nothing remarkable till we arrived at Tzaritzin.

At this city I hoped to get a travelling waggon, but no ſuch vehicle was to be purchaſed. I was obliged to ſet out on a cart with four wheels, for which I paid a ruble and a little ſpirits. We were ſent with diſpatches to the cabinet, and therefore were obliged to make all expedition. It is true, that I had two paſſports, one for myſelf, and the other for the grenadier, in caſe I might happen to fall ſick, or, by any unforeſeen cauſe, be hindered from proſecuting my journey with ſuch expedition as was required. In ſuch a conjuncture, I would have been obliged to ſend off the grenadier with the diſpatches, which I had no inclination to do; becauſe the ſoldier was of great uſe in procuring horſes, and whatever I wanted. From Aſtrachan I arrived in Tzaritzin in ſix days by water, and from Tzaritzin I arrived in Moſcow in nine days in my cart, without meeting with any other accident than burning four axletrees, and breaking twelve cart-wheels. Thus I was carried by water againſt the ſtream, and frequently againſt the wind, five hundred and twelve

twelve verſts in ſix days, and from Tzaritzin to Moſcow one thouſand and fifty one verſts in nine days. I, being extremely fatigued, and all over bruiſed with the cart, ſent my ſoldier to buy a waggon with proper harneſſes; and, thus equipped, ſet out and arrived in St Petersburgh in little more than three days, though I met with ſome hindrance on the road. I ſhall not mention the more remarkable towns I paſſed by and through at this time; becauſe I was too much fatigued, and in too great haſte to make any obſervations; I ſhall refer that till my return with my wife, and ſhall only take notice of two or three accidents, though trifling, which I met with betwixt Tzaritzin and St Peterſburgh.

At Tzaritzin I bought up as much proviſion as I thought would be neeedful for the ſoldier and me, till we ſhould arrive at Chopra caſtle, where we might have been ſupplied with more. We marched, without any uncommon accident happening, till we arrived at a poſt-houſe within a mile of Michaelofka. (*N. B.* Thoſe who go by poſt ſeldom touch at any town till they arrive at Tamboff. Poſthouſes are built in the deſart in order that the courier may have the ſhorteſt way) where, by accident, I happened to preſent to the writer the ſoldier's paſſport in place of my own: At this the writer made ſome ſcruple, ſaying it was very uncommon

to

to have two paſſports: But as we were diſpatched to the Senate he durſt not offer to ſtop us; becauſe it is no leſs than death to ſtop ſuch couriers. He however drove the cart to Chopra, but arriving there late, the writer belonging to that place had gone to bed in the town; of which I was glad, becauſe I might have been unneceſſarily hindered all night: The writer who brought us there, made what haſte he could to conſult with the other writer: But I ordered in the mean time to yoke in the freſh horſes and drive away. In paſſing between the town and caſtle, we met both the writers, ſo very expeditious had they been, who would have ſtopped us; but the ſoldier, who was a terror amongſt theſe people, ſwore that he would inſtantly ſhoot any who durſt attempt to ſtop us, as we were travelling in the night-time, and couriers for the cabinet, and that if the poſt-boy deſerted us, that he would fire at him and drive on himſelf: Thus we eſcaped being ſtopped a whole night at leaſt, and I was afraid that if they had been examined, it might have been found irregular in the governor of Aſtrachan to have granted two paſſports iu this manner; though neither the government nor poſt-houſes ſuffered by them any loſs. I was afterwards however informed that the governor had done nothing irregular: But the Coſſacks, whoſe towns theſe two were, having more liberty than the Ruſ-

ſians,

ſians, frequently make great work about nothing. Betwixt Chopra and Tamboff is a great deſart of one hundred and eighty verſts in which I had but ſmall chance of getting any proviſion, and the ſoldier being a ſtrong young healthy fellow who eat plentifully, we, having eat every bit of our own proviſions, were reduced to the greateſt neceſſity. In this extretremity we arrived at a poſthouſe in a very hot ſultry day, near the middle of this deſart, where we joyfully obſerved a kettle boiling; the people told us that they were making a ſoup of pork, and ſome barley and greens; that we ſhould be welcome to a little of it; but, they having no other veſſels to cool it in, than a trough in which they uſed to feed ſome pigs, we would be obliged to wait till it was cool enough in the pot, which was the only veſſel they eat out of. (Theſe people only ſtay for a fortnight or month, and are changed by others, ſo that they bring no furniture of any kind but what they find abſolutelely neceſſary.) We durſt make no ſtay; hunger is extremely pinching; the ſoldier made not the leaſt heſitation to waſh as clean as he could the naſty veſſel, and having cooled ſome broth, he deſired to know whether I would taſte it? At any other time ſuch a meſs thus ſerved up would have proved emetic, but at this time hunger forced me to taſte it, which ſeeming very delicious, I eat greedily. The pork was truly

truly good, which, with rye bread, was one of the beſt meals I ever made in my life, upon the ſtrength of which we arrived at Tamboff, where we were plentifully ſupplied.

Farther on betwixt Tamboff and Rezen, notwithſtanding all the care we had the hindermoſt axletree burnt, and our carriage broke down in the middle of a ſmall deſart. We had a ſpare axletree, but it was too large, nor had we an ax; at a diſtance we ſaw ſome peaſants mowing hay, to whom the ſoldier went for an ax, but returned without ſucceſs. Extremely mortified at this accident, I was going to diſpatch the ſoldier with the expreſs for the cabinet on foot to the next poſthouſe, when he, who did not chuſe to part with me, made anſwer, that if I would buy him a broad-ſword, if he happened to break his, he would ſoon make the axletree to anſwer: To this propoſal I gladly agreed, and indeed very expeditiouſly he made the axletree fit for the carriage. After this, I never travelled without an ax. On the north ſide of Moſcow I was neceſſitated to viſit a relation of our governor's, who kept me to ſupper about two hours. As his houſe was a mile from the poſt road, the poſt-boy, at the next village on the right road, ſaid, that his horſes, had no refreſhment at the laſt village and deſired an hour to feed them, which was readily granted. I fell on a ſleep, as did the ſoldier, but when

when I looked up, the ſun was high in the firmament, and the poſt-boy with his two horſes were gone. In the village we found only one man and two horſes, who agreed to carry us about ſix verſts farther to the next poſt-houſe. If a regular complaint had been made of him who left us, he would have ſuffered death; but, I thank God, my hands are hitherto free from blood.

My grenadier had hitherto behaved with undaunted courage, and though I had frequently reproved him for mal-treating the poſtmen for not making the expedition he directed, though impoſſible for their horſes to do more, he would not abſolutely deſiſt, but, with an air of important diligence, would order them to drive on; and, though often reproved, did not ſeldom refreſh their memories with his whip. At laſt, to the north of Tweer, he threatened a very ſurly fellow, and, receiving very diſagreeable returns, ſoon made him experience the elaſticity of his whip. The driver, not reliſhing ſuch diſcipline, leapt from the waggon, and in an inſtant overturned my grenadier, dexterouſly belabouring him, till I was truly afraid he would have killed him. With all my power, joined to that of the grenadier, I could ſcarcely get him diſengaged from the grenadier's hair, who by this time was heartily frightened, his face being all covered with blood, and much hair torn from his head. After this my grenadier

was

was metamorphoſed from a very troubleſome quarrelſome fellow, to the gentleneſs of a lamb, nor durſt he uſe his ſtrength and former inclination when there was need for it. At the next village, however, though I was not diſpleaſed that the ſoldier had got a check, I complained to the poſt-overſeers, and put them in mind of the danger they were in to let a crime of that kind go unpuniſhed. I did not forget to aſſure the guilty man, that my doing ſo was with a view to ſave him from the gallows, of which he would have been certain, if I had complained to the cabinet. His ſuperiors, as the grenadier, who gladly witneſſed the execution, told me, puniſhed him ſeverely till his back was covered over with blood.

We had travelled within a few verſts of Novogorod, when we ſpied many couriers from the cabinet, all officers; but as they were exerting all their faculties, trying who ſhould get firſt, we could have no intelligence from them. We had not proceeded much farther, when we were met by one leading his horſe quite fatigued, who would have preſſed our horſes, being a cabinet-courier; but when he underſtood that we were carrying meſſages to the cabinet, he deſiſted; for cabinet couriers have power to preſs any horſes, when theirs are fatigued, and rendered unable to proceed. He however informed us, that the Grand Ducheſs was delivered

of

of a daughter, and those officers who had passed us were sent to the different provinces, to intimate these joyful news. After this I met with nothing remarkable until I arrived at St Petersburgh, which I did with all safety on the 18th of July, and took up my lodging in a palace belonging to my benefactor and commander, Prince Golitzin.

CHAP. LXXVI.

Concerning what happened in St Petersburgh.

IT is remarkable that none of my old acquaintances knew me: I was unknown even to my own brother. As I thought it reasonable to take this day to myself, I sent for him, and then, in company with him, went to Mr Hadderling's house. We found him at home in company with Brigadier Crofts, my wife's uncle, but neither of them knew me. I enquired for Mr Hadderling's daughters, and was informed that they were taking a walk, but would return about tea-time, which they did, but they also did not know me; indeed I was as brown as a Spaniard, having been constantly exposed to the weather eighteen days. Next day I went to the medicine-chancery, at the regular hours, and was immediately introduced to the archiator, who happened to be there with my worthy

friend Dr Miniatty, of whom I made mention formerly. The archiator expreſſed ſome ſurpriſe and reſentment at my arrival, without having aſked leave from the chancery; but when I had ſatisfied him that I had hitherto never been appointed by the admiralty, nor had received my ſalary ſince I left Taverhoff, and produced my paſſport from the Prince, with a letter for him, he was ſatisfied, and aſſured me, that he had ſent four memorials to the admiralty to enforce my ſettlement and ſalary, and that I ſhould carry the fifth next day. I returned him my reſpectful thanks, but begged that he would either grant my diſcharge, or increaſe my ſalary five crowns more *per* month, as Mr Malloch had received the ſame; and as I was intruſted with the affairs which he had been intruſted with, that I would preſently petition the chancery for that purpoſe. The archiator anſwered, that I had not ſerved long, and that ſuch an advancement of ſalary was granted only to old ſervants. I inſiſted however, that I had done my duty, and now, as I was born free, I would either have what was but reaſonable, or my diſcharge. Dr Miniatty, who had been ſilent all this time, ſaid many obliging things in my favour, and deſired to ſpeak with the archiator privately. The reſult was, that he ordered me to prepare a petition for the advancement of my ſalary, which he had determined to grant, but diſcharged me to mention

any

any thing about my discharge. Before I left the chancery, I got my petition ready, and delivered it into the archiator's hand.

Next morning I attended the chancery, and received my dispatches according to my desire for the admiralty. At this time, being well able to speak, read, and write the Russian language, I had no need of an interpreter, and, afraid of falling into the base Secretary Neleuboff's hand, I, though I had no acquaintance with him, went resolutely to Admiral Golovine, a professed friend to the British upon all occasions, and president of the admiralty. The grandees do not keep people long in waiting, as is done in more civilized nations. I was immediately admitted, and, after I had told him all my grievances, I offered to put into his hands the memorials from the chancery; but he said that I ought to carry them to the admiralty, and present them myself to the board, with a petition acquainting them, that I had been near nineteen months kept from duty by the admiralty's not having duly answered the memorials from the medicine-chancery, and craving that the board would do me justice, and dispatch me for Astrachan with all convenient speed. I did so, and next morning attended the board when the president was there, and produced my memorials and petition, which occasioned a very great commotion among the writers. Neleuboff was sent for, and instantly

ly put under arreſt, as was his conciliariſt. This laſt is a perſon whoſe buſineſs it is to keep all the writers belonging to the department in good order, and alſo to get all diſpatches ready, according to orders he receives from the ſecretary; but ſometimes, as in the preſent caſe, they confound all regularity, and when detected, ſeldom eſcape deſerved puniſhment.

The ſecretary, by ſome ſubterfuge, had the good fortune to get free with a threatening reprimand; but the poor conciliariſt was condemned to die. I was told that application was made to the moſt merciful regent the Grand Ducheſs to ſave his life, and appoint him to run the gauntlet, which he could but have performed aukwardly enough, as he had formerly loſt a leg. This puniſhment he had the good fortune to eſcape, by the Princeſs Eliſabeth's mounting her father's throne a few days before he ought to have ſuffered.

I loſt no time, as has been related, to put my affairs on a good footing; but there I let them remain a while. As I had ſome deſire to ſtay, after ſo long abſence, amongſt my friends; and, as I had nothing to do but attend the admiralty once every day, only to let them ſee I was in the way of my duty and ready, I had the more time to make my obſervations. Beſides European ambaſſadors, one from China, one from Conſtantinople, and two from Perſia, reſided at once in St Peterſburgh,

terſburgh, and many from ſmaller Aſiatick principalities. The Chineſe ambaſſador was much eſteemed for his moderation and good quiet behaviour. The Turkiſh was inſolent, as was his numerous retinue, beyond all deſcription. Some of his followers, having tranſgreſſed the bounds of all diſcretion, not ſatisfied with affronting people on the ſtreets, through which they frequently uſed to ride, purely for miſchief, at laſt entered into the inhabitants houſes by force, and attempted to abuſe both married and unmarried women. Complaints having been ſent from the miniſtry to the ambaſſador, were unanſwered and diſregarded: At laſt a memorial was put into his hands acquainting him of the many former repreſentations which had been ſent to him, repreſenting the miſconduct of his followers, without any regard having been paid to them; that this was the laſt they intended to ſend, in which the miniſtry demanded, that the Turks ſhould only be allowed to walk, unarmed, into the city; and that their number never ſhould exceed two or three at a time; that the centinels had orders to put a ſtop to a greater number; and laſtly, that an expreſs was ſent to the Sublime Porte to juſtify ſuch conduct. This memorial, inſtead of reſtraining, rather inflamed them; for ſoon after they received it, five Turks ſuperbly dreſſed, mounted upon their beſt horſes, dared to ride up to the bridge, where

where a ſerjeant's command did duty, which they attempted to paſs, though the ſoldier upon watch gave them a ſign to retire. The foremoſt of the Turks, at one blow, cut off an arm of the ſoldier with his ſcymitar. The ſerjeant at the head of the ſoldiers brought the Turk to the ground with his halbert, and killed another outright, then ordered the ſoldiers to preſent; but the three remainiug Turks had no inclination to continue longer. It was ſaid that the Turk who fell from his horſe was in great danger of his life. Threatening complaints were ſent to the Grand Chancellor Count Oſterman, who, I doubt not, anſwered them properly; but in place (as was demanded by the ambaſſador) of puniſhing the ſerjeant, he was immediately advanced, for his gallant behaviour, to the rank of an enſign, becauſe be had exactly obeyed the orders given him.

I there ſaw the public entry of the Perſian ambaſſador, and the preſents, with the elephants I formerly had ſeen at Aſtrachan, which was ſuperb enough. The ambaſſador, with ſome of his principal attendants, was carried to court in coaches belonging to the Emperor. Soon after that, many Perſians advanced with Chineſe boxes, in which, it was ſaid, were contained valuable curioſities natural and artificial, and ſome jewels of all kinds. What the value of theſe preſents might be, I never was informed. After they were

were gone, the elephants were conducted, every one directed by a man ſitting behind his ears, with a ſmall ax in his hand, ſuch as I deſcribed formerly. The unruly elephant was very troubleſome, for I was witneſs to his flying into a fit of paſſion, that required all the art and power of his keeper to command him. I happened to be ſtanding with the learned and reverend Mr Lerna, our miniſter, within the glacis of the admiralty, when the beaſt, unprovoked, reared his trunk high, made a noiſe, and directed his ſteps towards us. We very ſoon retreated, but if his rider had not been able to manage him, he might have undoubtedly killed ſome hundreds of people. Theſe great beaſts were covered with very rich ſilks, brocades, and cloth of gold, ſome of them reached near the ground. They gave out that King Solomon's tent covered one of them. It was of ſilk, very large, antient, and certainly the worſe of the wearing; but I ſcarcely believe it was Solomon's. This however was eſteemed a precious preſent.

After I left St Peterſburgh, in the reign of the Empreſs Eliſabeth, in the winter ſeaſon, I was informed, that the courtiers cauſed two of the largeſt elephants to be brought before the winter palace, with a deſign to make them fight; for which purpoſe a large dyke of ſnow was made croſs the great area before the palace. They brought an elephant on each ſide of

this

this dyke, oppoſite the one to the other, ſpoke to them, encouraged, and provoked them as much as they could, but all to no purpoſe. They ſeemed to rejoice to meet, and played with their long teeth as oxen are wont to do with their horns, but never offered the ſmalleſt violence. The ſoldiers had at laſt orders to throw ſquibs and ſmall fire-works among their feet. The elephant is extremely afraid of all kinds of fire-works: It was therefore thought, that this would have the effect of cauſing them fight; but in this they were alſo miſtaken. It had indeed the effect of frightening them exceſſively; and they ran with their directors differently; the one ran under a large arch, and there killed his governor, by ſqueezing him betwixt the arch and his back; the other ran up the principal ſtreet, and in his fright ſeized a German baker, toſſed him high up in the air, and when the unfortunate man fell down upon the ſtreet, the elephant at once preſſed him with his foot to a maſh.

I ſaw yet remaining betwixt the palace and the admiralty part of the ice-houſe, which the late Empreſs Anne had cauſed build with a view to ridicule one of the moſt antient and reſpectable families in Ruſſia, by cauſing marry one of that family diſordered in mind, to a woman troubled with the ſame infirmity. Few great perſonages have ever appeared in the world, who have not one time or other

diſcovered

discovered some weakness, which could scarcely have been suspected, till detected. The Empress Anne was said to have been a sensible, humane, judicious lady, but she could not check her childish levities; and it is not easy to imagine what was her policy or pleasure in this improper display of her power. The walls were of ice; the bed-stead, and all pieces of household furniture were made of ice; they fired out of ice cannons: But for what? to do honour, or, which is the truth, to ridicule the Russ nobility in the person of a poor foolish pair, taken from the best family in Russia. The same sum of money, which was expended upon this dream, might have made many honest good families in Russia very happy. I could not help thinking, that it looked as if heaven had designed to let us see, what a poor end the greatest earthly grandeur frequently comes to; for no sooner was this farce of mock magnificence ended, than that great Empress was taken ill and died; and although the succeeding summer was extremely hot, yet part of the walls of that ice-house stood, to expose the last action of the great Empress Anne, till the month of August, as it were to let people, living at the distance of thousands of miles, have time to witness the last whim of one of the greatest personages upon earth, to have been only fit to amuse children.

In the month of Auguſt we had daily news of the Swedes deſigning to attempt the deſtruction of the royal navy at Cronſtadt. One day in the admiralty, I happened to ſpeak with an Engliſhman, who had been very long in the ſervice, and was employed at Revel. He was expreſsly ſent for to go to Cronſtadt, to ſink ſome veſſels to prevent any acceſs by the Swedes near the harbour. He ſaid that he had effectually done his duty, and that the board had given him the rank of captain of foot; but obſerved, that if they had advanced his ſalary, and given him a ſmall pecuniary conſideration, it would have been more agreeable to him. This man was brought into Ruſſia by the father of his country, the Great Peter: he was ſaid to be a very eminent mechanic, and underſtood ſea-affairs extremely well, and altho' he was grown old in the ſervice, he was but at that time titled a captain, without any increaſe of his ſalary for that work I mentioned: No leſs than the ſafety of Cronſtadt depended upon it, though there was not found one belonging to the navy that the board of admiralty could truſt with it; and the only impediment to make a figure in the navy was owing to an exceſſive modeſty, and a conſiderable ſhare of wiſdom, uſeful to others, but not to himſelf.

The great General Keith arrived in St Peterſburgh this ſeaſon. I would gladly give a character of this great man, but finding myſelf

myſelf very unequal to ſuch a performance, let it therefore ſuffice to ſay, if ever any man was poſſeſſed with wiſdom, true bravery, and greatneſs of ſoul, he was the perſon. His actions, during the courſe of his long ſervice in Ruſſia, demonſtrate this to be true. He kept excellent diſcipline in his army, yet the ſoldiers called and eſteemed him their father. He never was vain-glorious, no high language did he ever utter; every expreſſion was modeſt: But the word of command was reſolution itſelf. The ſoldiers adored him, nor were they ever in the leaſt afraid of any number of enemies, when he commanded them. He was always ſucceſsful, and though he was wounded, yet he never was conquered. It would employ larger volumes than mine to give ſome regular account of this great man. I ſhall therefore only obſerve, that he commanded an army of 40,000 regular troops in the Ukraine, when the late Empreſs Anna Joannovna died; and when he received the orders to ſwear, and alſo to cauſe his army ſwear fealty to the Duke of Courland, he would not do it. He had no objection to the Emperor John's being heir; but he judged very prudently, that the Duke of Courland, being conſtituted regent, never could be agreeable to the Grand Ducheſs, nor the Prince; wherefore, he perſuaded the army under his command to remain as they were, till the royal family's pleaſure ſhould be known;

known ; and for that very purpoſe diſpatched a major, in whom he could put truſt, with an account of his reſolution, and adviſed the major to get into St Peterſburgh, by unfrequented ways, dreſſed as a peaſant, and apply to the Grand Ducheſs, or her royal huſband, perſonally. This was ſucceſsfully effected ; but the Duke of Courland was arreſted, and ſent to Shiſſelburgh that night he arrived : However, the Grand Ducheſs was well pleaſed to ſee that ſhe had a general in chief, with ſo reſpectable a number of troops, who had nobly diſdained to take oaths for the Duke of Courland, and only waited her Highneſs's orders, to reſcue her from all danger. This great general was in St Peterſburgh at my arrival, deſigned to command the army under his great friend Count Lacy, who ever entertained ſo high an opinion of his military genius, that he never attempted any thing of moment without his approbation and concurrence. The Swedes infatuated, declared war, at a time when any ſingle man might have foreſeen their danger. The army of Ruſſia was then not only numerous, but fluſhed with the many victories and conqueſts they had gained over the Turks, and commanded by their victorious generals, whom they really adored.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXXVII.

Declaration of War against Sweden.

THE Swedes were forward enough to declare war on the 28th of July, and the Russians on the 24th of August following. The declaration was read in the British chapel immediately after service, before any of the auditory were permitted to retire, and on Monday the army began to cross the Neva in their way to Wilmanstrand, where General Wrangle lay strongly encamped with a body of 14,000 men. An accident happened in the night preceding the action, which might have discouraged less resolute troops than the Russians. The Russians, at no great distance from the enemy, encamped on a rising ground, almost surrounded with bogs. Orders were given to keep a sharp look-out during the night-time, and that if any thing was observed to stir in the bogs, a signal was to be given by the discharge of a musket. The night was very dark, and a thick fog had spread over all that country. Near morning a horse had strayed into the bogs, and a centinel hearing some noise from thence, fired (as he was commanded) his piece; when instantly the whole army was under arms. The regiment next to that centinel,

centinel, miſtaking, in the fog, their friends for enemies, fired upon them, which was immediately returned, and many brave men were killed and wounded on both ſides, before it was poſſible to diſcover their error: However, this had no other bad effect upon the braveſt troops in the world, than the loſs, which was too great, of theſe few men.

The army marched ſtraight to the enemy, whom they found ſtrongly intrenched, with Wilmanſtrand on their right, and a very well fortified camp on their left. The Ruſſians attacked them with the greateſt conduct and reſolution imaginable. The Swedes, equally reſolute, defended themſelves with great bravery from two o'clock, *P. M.* till nine at night, when the ſhattered remains of their army ſurrendered themſelves priſoners of war. An ill adviſed accident happened at the end of this action. The town of Wilmanſtrand diſplayed their white flag, and offered to deliver it up to the Ruſſians. The field-marſhal ordered a few of his beſt troops to take poſſeſſion of the gates: Before they had marched half way, the Swedes upon the walls fired upon them, which exaſperated them to ſuch a degree, that a terrible carnage enſued.

During the heat of the battle, as I was credibly informed, Major-general Uxkull ordered a Scots gentleman (Captain Fullerton) to march with his company, to force a redoubt.

doubt: Mr Fullerton, now Lieutenant General, had not marched far before he loſt the half of his men. At this inſtant General Keith, who was every where, paſſing by, aſked who that was? and ordered him back to his former ſtation. Mr Fullerton aſſured the General that he had only obeyed the orders of his Major General. Keith ſent off one of his adjutants in queſt of the Major General, who was found far from danger: But Mr Keith, who could not reliſh ſo very abſurd an order, told Mr Uxkull of his error, and alſo of his keeping far from danger. He then ordered him to remain in ſuch a place from whence he could have a diſtinct view of his diviſion, and ſend his orders without loſs of time. It was told me that theſe orders were ſcarcely given, till Uxkull was killed with a cannon ball, as it were to go hence and anſwer for the blood of ſo many brave men fooliſhly ſpilt.

All the ammunition, cannon, ſmall arms, grenadoes, tents, *&c.* belonging to the Swediſh army fell into the hands of the Ruſſians; the fort of Willmanſtrand was razed to the ground, and upwards of two thouſand priſoners were diſpatched into Ruſſia, beſides three thouſand wounded ſoldiers. The brave General Wrangle was wounded and ſent with the reſt of the Swediſh officers to St Peterſburgh, and uſed with great humanity. He begged, and obtained his deſire, that

that he might be kept near Count Lacy, his conqueror. The Count gave him lodgings in his houſe, and frequently through the day viſited him, and although Mr Wrangle was near eighty years of age, he was very ſoon recovered.

This old General had been formerly a priſoner in Ruſſia, in Peter the Great's time, and had been obliged, before he could obtain liberty, to return home, to engage never to ſerve againſt the Ruſſians upon pain of death, and ſuch an engagement he had ſigned. He no ſooner was recovered, than the Empreſs Elizabeth, who then reigned, ſent to congratulate him on his recovery, and expreſſed her deſire to ſee him at Court. He accordingly went and paid his reſpects to her Majeſty, but ſtill he had ſome diffidence that the Ruſſian government might call him to an account for having ſerved againſt them at this time; and therefore thought proper to hint as much to that moſt merciful Sovereign. She called him father, and expreſſed no ſmall ſurpriſe that he could entertain a thought that the Ruſſians were ſo barbarous; aſſuring him of all liberty either to ſtay there, or retire to Sweden, upon his parole given not to ſerve during this preſent war. But ſhe expreſſed no ſmall ſurpriſe that he, in ſo advanced an age, could be prevailed upon, or indeed was able, to endure the fatigues of war. To which he only an-

ſwered

ſwered that he thought it his duty to ſerve his country, nor never could decline it, ſo long as he was able, unleſs prevented by his parole of honour; though at the ſame time he acknowledged, that even giving his parole not to ſerve longer againſt the Empire of Ruſſia could not be diſagreeable to him, becauſe he had, ſince his arrival in St Peterſburgh, experienced ſo much humanity and politeneſs, that he much doubted if any nation in Europe could equal it: For, ſaid the old man, to ſurpaſs it is impoſſible; and he did not ſcruple to declare that even the Swedes could not blame him for ſuch ſentiments. He farther declared that he, from principle purely, never would fight againſt her Imperial Majeſty's intereſt, but would be glad of all opportunities to fight againſt her enemies, provided only that Sweden was excepted. Upon which he obtained his liberty, and the Swediſh officers were permitted to walk through the ſtreets of St Peterſburgh, and dine at any gentlemen's houſes, who were alſo recommended by the Court to uſe them with all manner of hoſpitality.

CHAP. LXXVIII.

Concerning what happened to the Author, and the cruel Crasna Schoke.

THE battle of Wilmanstrand was fought upon the third of September. An order from the Medicine's Chancery was brought to my lodgings on the fifth, early in the morning, commanding my immediate attendance. When I entered the Chancery, the secretary desired me to make all haste to go for Wilmanstrand; because, said he, the number of wounded is so great that it is not possible for the surgeons, and others to visit them once in one day, and, telling me, that a memorial was making out for the Admiralty to acquaint them with this resolution. This was a blow I very little expected. I expostulated with them as much as I was able. I put them in mind of my contract, by which they might learn that I never intended to serve in the army: Then I desired them to reflect upon my having been near twenty months without pay, one farthing of which I had not as yet received: Lastly, I desired them to consider what the Board of Admiralty and others would think of them, when they daily sent to them such wavering unsettled memorials. To this an old sly translator, a German, named Waring, said that the

the Archiator designed, as soon as a vacancy should happen, to advance me in the army, and had promised me out of the Chancery two months pay as a present. By this time I had got a little more courage, and calm reason was taking its place: I frankly answered, that from the very beginning of my services I was told, and indeed gave credit to it, that the Archiator designed to advance me; that I hoped this would have taken place long before the time of my contract was expired: But that all these fine promises had hitherto taken no other effect, than to make me quite diffident. That, as I was in possession of attestations from all my commanders concerning my good services, and from the Medicine's Chancery concerning my qualifications; and finally as the time of my engagement in the service was expired; I was determined to take my dismission from it. To these reasonable remonstrances, I was told that such language was seldom heard in Russia, and that if I would not go voluntarily, there was no difficulty to send me with a party of dragoons, Though I made answer, that if they sent me with dragoons, neither they nor the dragoons could cause me do what I would not; yet the dragoons ran so much in my fancy all day, that I dreamed of them at night. Finding they could not get me to agree, they advised me to go to the Archiator,

tor. I did ſo, and our diſcourſe ended much in the ſame way as above, only with this remarkable difference, that the Archiator in great rage declared that I ſhould be ſent that very night.

I now for the firſt time, ſince I arrived in Ruſſia, began to be alarmed, and I could find none to ſupport me, however juſt my cauſe was, but the Britiſh Ambaſſador. I loſt, therefore, no time in repreſenting my grievances to him, though altogether a ſtranger. The honourable Mr Finch our ambaſſador, who was greatly careſſed at court, ordered me to return to the chancery, and let them know from him, that if they broke through the agreement of our contract, or that if they ſent me by an act of arbitrary power to any place, contrary to their ſenſe of my agreement with them, he would eſpouſe my cauſe, and have juſtice done me; and that he had ordered me to call daily at his houſe to acquaint his ſecretary with their proceedings againſt me: And laſtly, if they ſent me away, he would apply to the Grand Ducheſs, and get me brought back very ſoon, and would not fail to get them puniſhed for their perfidy and tyranny. I made no manner of heſitation to report the ambaſſador's meſſage, at which they ſeemed not a little diſturbed. Whilſt I was in the chancery, the Archiator arrived; and I, not knowing what would be my fate, depended upon Mr Finch's promiſe,

miſe, and, as I was deſired, ſat in the room waiting the iſſue; for at this time all the doors where the Archiator and his counſellors were conſulting, were not only ſhut, but centinels placed at them, ſo that it was impoſſible to over-hear one word. After about half an hour's waiting, I was ſummoned to attend. I doubted not that they would threaten much, and endeavour by ſuch ways to prevail with me to ſubmit, though I was firmly reſolved to ſtand it out to the laſt extremity. But how much was I ſurpriſed to hear the Archiator ſpeak to me with more complaiſance than ever he did before, and put into my hands at the ſame time a memorial to the admiralty, acquainting them that the ſub-ſurgeons and learners whom I had formerly required, agreeable to the regulations for the port at Aſtrachan, were diſpatched; therefore deſiring the admiralty to grant their ſalaries and diſpatches without loſs of time. He at this time never ſpoke one word about the army or dragooning, but parted with me very reſpectfully: The truth is, I had been informed, and experienced it to be true, that the honourable Mr Finch was remarkably diſtinguiſhed at that court, and that every college or office in St Peterſburgh was afraid of him; for he always ſpoke out, and whatever he repreſented was well taken, and anſwered according to his deſire. As I was walking home, Dr Smith, an Iriſh gentleman,

man, phyſician to the guards, met me, and ſaid that the Archiator had ſaid to him that I was extremely obſtinate, *&c.* This gentleman, I dare ſay, wiſhed me very well, and ſpoke the real ſentiments of his mind. At the finiſhing of his diſcourſe, he deſired me to remember I was not in Great Britain, and wiſhed I would ſmell the ground. My anſwer was ſhort, *viz.* that I had conſidered every thing, and that though I had not been ſo long in Ruſſia as he, I had ſmelled and meaſured twice as much Ruſſian ground as he had, at leaſt: That I had taken my meaſures, and was determined never to ſubmit to do any thing, but what by my contract I had pointedly agreed to. This affair thus ended, and I never was troubled more about it.

The war was carried on with vigour on the Ruſſians ſide. Gen. Keith forced a very ſtrong out-poſt belonging to the Swedes, not without an equal loſs of men: But a barbarous affair happened at this time, which would have tarniſhed the glory of the Ruſſian army, if it had been carried on by any of the regulars. A Coſſack, called Craſna Schoke, or Red Cheeks, was bred in Peter the Great's army, and, for his bravery upon all occaſions, was, by that Great Sovereign, created major-general of the irregular Coſſacks. This Craſna Schoke was a perfect ſavage, nor was even Peter the Great able to reſtrain his cruel diſpoſition, neither

by

by threats nor punishments. He was indeed strong, indefatigable, and took very little rest. Before the war was declared, he arrived in St Petersburgh with 4000 horsemen under his command. He one day was admitted into the presence of the Grand Duchess, who was pleased to say, that she was sorry for all the horse, but particularly the irregulars, because no magazines had been erected for them. Crasna Schoke, without any hesitation, made answer, That if her Highness would only lose no time in declaring war, he would ask no manner of forage for his horses; but till that was done, he could not provide for them, and a very short delay would render them quite useless for war: He said, that had Peter the Great followed his advice, there would have been no war at present; for, said he, I advised the Great Emperor to cut off women and children: Now, said he, these very infants, then sucking their mothers breasts, and many born since, are the people who form their army at present: Upon this declaration, the Great Duchess let him know, that she and the whole ministry hated cruelty of all kinds; that she esteemed Peter the Great for his humanity, as much at least, as for all his other great qualifications joined together. She used the force of all her rhetoric to dissuade him from cruelty, and ended her discourse by assuring him that he never could expect any esteem or regard from her, if he

used

uſed the enemy cruelly, but averred that ſhe looked upon all ſuch as the common enemies of mankind. Then, this generous and compaſſionate Princeſs intreated the Field-marſhal and General Keith carefully to obſerve Craſna Schoke's actions, and to reſtrain his native fierceneſs and barbarity. However deſpotic a regular general may exerciſe his great power over the irregulars in the Ruſſian army, a prudent man finds himſelf obliged to uſe ſound policy, and take all the gentle ways poſſible to gain his end; wherefore theſe two great generals contented themſelves to diſſuade Craſna Schoke to refrain from his former barbarous actions, and careſſed him much above what either his rank, or any other qualifications had a title to.

The battle of Wilmanſtrand was ſcarcely ended, when Craſna Schoke and his men were amiſſing. The generals had no doubt of his being ſet out upon ſome of his irregular expeditions, but could not conceive what it might be. At laſt, after three or four days abſence, he appeared loaded with ſpoil, and many thouſand heads of cattle. A few days after that, a major was diſpatched from Count Lewenhaupt with expreſſes for Field-marſhal Lacy, giving a particular account of the many hamlets and villages burnt to the ground, and every ſoul put to death, who unfortunately fell into the hands of that

barbarian

barbarian Crafna Schoke, and poſſibly this major was charged with ſome other affairs. The Field-marſhal, agreeable to his natural politeneſs, received the major, treated him, and entertained him as a gentleman, and laſtly parted with him, after having been an hour in ſecret diſcourſe, openly conferring upon him ſome marks of diſtinction: Whether Crafna Schoke ſuſpected that complaints had been made to the Field-marſhal or not, I never could learn; but the next morning he went off with only a handful of men, to reconnoitre the enemies ſituation; he paſſed ſome miles on a narrow way, ſituated betwixt mountains and an impaſſable moraſs, till he was at laſt ſtopped by a breaſt-work, mounted with cannon, which he did not reliſh; he therefore returned back the way he came, for there was no other; but had not retreated far till he was ſtopped by another breaſt-work, which the enemy had thrown up whilſt he was marching to the fartheſt off one: He was there attacked briſkly, nor could he eſcape; he would not deliver himſelf and men up priſoners: At laſt however he rode into the moraſs, but not far, till his horſe was drowned, and himſelf ſhot; too good a death for ſuch a man! The Swedes certainly had way-laid him, for they knew him well, and not ſatisfied with having ſhot him, it was ſaid, they cut the dead

body all to pieces. Such was the end of this monſter of the human kind.

But this affair did not altogether end thus, for a body of the guards was at this time in the army, and a few of them were upon duty at the Field-marſhal's tents, when the Swediſh major had a conference with his Excellency. They, having obſerved the polite behaviour of the Field-marſhal to the major, tho' an enemy, were prepoſſeſſed with a fooliſh notion that the Field-marſhal was deſigned to deliver the Ruſſian army into the hands of Count Lewenhaupt; and, without great difficulty, brought the reſt of the guards into their way of thinking; who ſuddenly took to arms, without ſo much as one officer, threatening to extirpate all the foreigners in the army: The Field-marſhal committed their reduction to the care of General Keith, who, being their lieutenant-colonel, mounted immediately, after having given private orders to his adjutants, and rode calmly up to them, made inquiry into the cauſe of their grievances, put them in mind that they never could attempt any thing of themſelves, and aſſured them that the reſult would end in their deſtruction. He then adviſed them to put themſelves under his command, who was their lieutenant-colonel, and he would anſwer for it, that they ſhould have ſpeedy juſtice done them. They agreed to this and declared their ſatisfaction to be commanded

manded by the ever-victorious General Keith. He then commanded them to draw up and go through their exercise; at last, he ordered them to ground their pieces, and march off the ground: At this instant, a regiment of Cuirassiers rode up, surrounded and disarmed them. They were instantly shackled and sent to St Petersburgh in carts; and thence dispersed in small numbers in garrisons through the whole Empire, with strict orders to punish them with great severity for every small crime which they might be guilty of. Twenty or thirty of those mad-men were sent to Astrachan; but the Princess Elizabeth had mounted the throne before this happened; an account of which memorable affair I shall give, as I had it from good authority, though I acknowledge it is not agreeable to any other account hitherto given of it.

END OF VOLUME FIRST.

*** Some few Errors have escaped into this First Volume, the Author residing at a Distance from the Press, but these shall be carefully corrected by Errata at the End of the Second.